

The Project Gutenberg eBook of An Introductory for to Lerne to Read, To Pronounce, and to Speke French Trewly, by Giles Du Wés

This ebook is for the use of anyone anywhere in the United States and most other parts of the world at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this ebook or online at www.gutenberg.org. If you are not located in the United States, you'll have to check the laws of the country where you are located before using this eBook.

Title: An Introductory for to Lerne to Read, To Pronounce, and to Speke French Trewly

Author: Giles Du Wés

Release Date: June 8, 2009 [EBook #29068]

Language: English

Credits: Produced by Greg Lindahl, RÃ©nald LÃ©vesque and the Online Distributed Proofreading Team at <http://www.pgdp.net> (This file was produced from images generously made available by the BibliothÃ©que nationale de France (BnF/Gallica) at <http://gallica.bnf.fr>)

*** START OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK AN INTRODUCTORIE FOR TO LERNE TO READ, TO PRONOUNCE, AND TO SPEKE FRENCH TREWLY ***

NOTE DU TRANSCRIPTEUR

Afin de maintenir l'alignement vertical des mots anglais et des mots franÃ§ais, nous avons dÃº conserver tout un bagage d'espaces, contrairement aux normes PG.

Cette Ã©dition ne comprend qu'une partie d'un ouvrage beaucoup plus grand. Les rÃ©fÃ©rences aux pages 1 Ã 890 ne pourront pas Ãªtre trouvÃ©es dans ce livre.

Page 891

AN INTRODUCTORIE

FOR

TO LERNE TO REDE, TO PRONOUNCE AND TO SPEKE FRENCH TREWLY,

COMPYLED

FOR THE RIGHT HIGH, EXELLENT AND MOST VERTUOUS LADY

THE LADY MARY OF ENGLANDE,

DOUGHTER TO OUR MOST GRACIOUS SOVERAYN LORDE KYNG HENRY THE EIGHT.

Page 892

AVIS DE L'ÉDITEUR.

L'auteur de cette Grammaire ayant apporté un soin extrême à marquer la prononciation par l'accent, on a dû s'attacher à reproduire scrupuleusement les accents du texte original.

Mais il faut savoir que Du Guez, par un système particulier, emploie l'accent placé *sous* la voyelle. Nous avons reporté l'accent au-dessus, conformément à l'usage moderne.

Cette substitution a d'autant moins d'inconvénient, que nulle part Du Guez n'emploie l'accent supérieur; par conséquent, il n'y a point de confusion à craindre. C'est un très-petit détail dont il suffit que le lecteur soit averti.

F. G.

Page 893

AN INTRODUCTORIE

FOR TO LERNE TO REDE,

TO PRONOUNCE AND TO SPEKE FRENCH TREWLY.

FOR IMPLORATION OF GRACE.

Grace of God that I love so moche
G race de Dieu que jayme tant

I your requier ryght humbly
I e uous requier treshumblement

the gift of love without any further
L e don damour sans plus auant

of it to make any refuce
E n faire aulcun refusement

If ye do fynde in any wise
S e uous trouués aulcunement

of me service, but in trouth
D e moy seruice quen loyaulté

I gyve you leve utterly
U ous habandonne entierement

to wyll at all at your wyll
U oulloir du tout a uoulenté

toward me to use of great rigour
U ers moy user de grant rigeur

and me to banysshe from all good hap
E t me bannir de tout bon heur

without more of me to have pite.
S ans plus de moy auoir pité.

Sola salus seruire Deo, sunt cetera fraudes.

Page 894

AN INTRODUCTORIE

TO THE LADY MARY.

For the honour of Mary
Pour lhonneur de Marye

God daughter to saynt Mary
filleule a saynte Marye

virgin and mother Jesu Christ
vierge et mere Jhesuh Crist

have these verses ben written.
ont ces verse esté escripts.

MARIA.

glasse mirouer	mesure mesure	shewynge monstrant
lenyng appuis	lovyng amoureux	fulfilled assouuie
rose rose	redde rouge	well smellyng redolente
that can nat vade inmarcessible	yonge jeune	jolie jolie
amonge entre	chosen eslytes	excellente excellente
for ever more a tousjours mais	be ye soyez	blessyd. benye. Amen.

THE PROLOGUE.

How beit that I do nat, nat knowe how that many as well lerned in good
Combien que ne ignore point que plusieurs tant qualifiéz es bonnes

lettres as also well spoken in the frenche tonge (at the lest nat beyng
lectres come aussy élégant en la langue francoise (au moins pour non estre

naturall and borne of the lande and cuntry) have composed, and written rules and
naturel et natif du territoire et pais) ont composés et escripz régles et

principles for introduction in the sayd tonge the whiche par aventure, as
principes pour introduction en la dicte langue les quelz peult estre, come

witnessed saint Hierome to Paulin, have taught before that they have ben
tiesmoigne saint Hierome a Paulin, ont enseignés auant que auoir esté

conynge, for how beit that arte is folower of nature folowyng her right nygh,
scauantz, car ja soit que art soit imitatrice de nature lensuiuant de bien pres,

Page 895

yet neuerthesse can nat she ouertake her. Wherfore the sayd composytours
sy ne la peult elle toutefois aconsuuir. Pourquoi les ditz compilateurs

all togyder leanyng to the same ben by nature in sondrie places checked reprod
du tout adherens à icelle sont par nature en diuers lieux cancellés repris

and corrected. Shulde it nat seme a thyng selde and strange to se a Frenchman
et corrigéz. Ne sembleroit ce point chose rare et estrange ueoir ung Francois

endeuoir and inforce himself to teche unto the Germainys the langage of Almaine:
se ingerer et efforcer dapprendre aux Allemans la lange tyoise,

ye and that more over is, upon the same to compyle rules and principles, how beit
uoire et qui plus est, sur icelle composer régles et principes, combien

that agaynst me and my reason some body myght say, that one
que contre moy et ma rayson quelque ung pourroit dire que on

shulde fynde no body whiche shulde teche Hebreu, Greke, nor Laten, if it were nat
ne troueroit ame qui enseigneroit Hebreu, Grec, ne Latin, sil ne

laufull to any body so to do but to him which shulde have it of nature: to whom I
loisoit a auscun de ce faire sinon a celui qui laroit de nature: a quoy je

answere that it is another thyng to teche and instruct by the principles
respons que cest aultre chose densegnér et daprendre par les principes

and reules made by divers well expertz auctours, by great space and longe proces
et régles faitz par diuers expertz aucteurs, par interualle et diuturnité

of longe tyme well approved, than at the fyrst metyng and nat havynge a
de long temps bien approuvéz, que de première abordée et nauoir ung

language but meanely and as a thyng borrowed to be wyllyng by and by
langage que moienement et come par emprunt, en uouloir cy pris cy mis,

nat only instructe the others, but also to comyle upon the same reules
non seulement enseignér les aultres, mais aussy composé sur ce régles

certayne, the whiche doynge is nat graunted but unto ryght few of them whiche
infallibles, ce que scauoir faire nest ottoie a bien peu de ceulz qui

ben borne of the sayd langage, for touchyng my self to whom the sayd
sont mesme natif du dict langage, car touchant moy mesmes a qui la dicte

tonge is maternall or naturall, and whiche by the space of therty yeres
langue est maternelle ou naturelle, et qui par lespase de trente ans

and more have besyed me howbeit that I am ryght ignorant, to teche
et plus me suis entremis (combien que soie tres ignorant) d'enseigner

Page 896

and instruct many great princes and princesses, as to deceased of
et apprendre plusieurs grandz princes et princesses, comme a feu de

noble and recomended memory the prince Arthur, the noble kyng Henry
noble et recommandée memoire le prince Arthur, le noble roy Henry

for the present prosperously regnyng, to whom God gyve lyfe perpetuall:
pour le present prospereusement regnant, a qui Dieu doit uie perpetuelle:

the queenes of France and Scotlande, with the noble marquis of Excestre,
les roynes de France et d'Escosse, avec le noble marquis d'Excestre, etc.

for the whiche thyng to fulfyll I have done my power and deuer to serche
pour la quelle chose accomplir jay fait mon pouoir et debuoir de perscruter

and seke all that which hath semed me to this purpose to serve: I have nat nevertheless
et chercher tout ce qui ma semblé a ce propos seruir: sy nay je toutesuois

founde rules infallybles, bycause that it is nat possyble to fynde any
peu trouver régles infalibles, pour ce quil nest possible de telles les

suche, that is to say, suche whiche may serve without any faulte, as do
trouuer, cest a dire, telles que puissent seruir infalliblement, comme font

the rules compiled for to lerne Laten, Greke and Hebreu and other suche
les régles composées pour apprendre Latin, Grec et Hebrieu et autres telz

languages: the whiche nevertheless the sayd compilatours have overtaken,
langages: ce que neantmoins les ditz compilateurs ont entrepris

to the ende that I ne say presumed to do, howbeit they have nat ben but lytell
(affin que ne die presumés) de faire, ja soit quilz naient esté que petit de

tyme to lerne it, but nowbeit so that suche rules and techyng ben
temps a l'apprendre, mais or soit ainsy que telz régles et enseignementz soient

sufficient and farre above my workes, by cause nevertheless that
tressuffisants et loing par desus mes oeuvres, pour ce toutes fois que

now notwithstanding myn ignorancy, I am agayne by my most redoubted
maintenant (nonobstant mon ignorance) suis derechief (par mon tres redoubté

lorde and prince the kyng above named, ordayned to administre myn accustomed
seigneur et prince le roy dessus nommé) ordonné d'administrer mon accoustumé

poore and unworthy seruyce to most illustre, ryght excellent and ryght
pouere et indigne seruyce a tres illustre, tres excellente et tres

vertuose lady my lady Mary of Englande his ryght entierly well beloved
uertueuse dame ma dame Mary d'Angleterre sa tres entierement bien aymée

Page 897

doughter, the whiche right specially and straitly hath me commanded and
fille, laquelle tres spécialement et estroitement ma comandé et

encharged to reduce and to put by writtyng the maner how I have proceded
chargé de reduire et mettre par escript la maniere coment jay procédé

towarde her sayd progenitours and predecessours, as that same also by the which

eneurs ses dictz progeniteurs et predecesseurs, come celle aussy par la quelle

I have her so so taught, and do teche dayly whiche to refuse,
je lay tellement quellement instruit, et instruis journellement, ce que refuser

nat withstandynge the reasons above sayd alleged, I durst nat, nor wolde nat
(nonobstant les raisons dessus dictes alleguée) noseroie ne uouldroie,

how beit that I am ryght well assured to merite more for and by cause of myn
combien que soie tres assureé de plus meriter pour et cause de mon

obedience than by any seruice or sacrifyce that to her I may do, fulfylling
obedience que par aulcun seruice ou sacrifice que luy puisse prestér, accomplissant

her most noble and gracious comandement, gratious say I, by cause
son tresnoble et gracieux comandement, gracieus dis je, pour ce

that her beniuolence and good wyll is to proffite to others as to
que sa beniuolence et bon uouloir est de prouffiter aux aultres come a

herselfe, wherfore I supplie and require all reders the causes and reasons
elle mesme, pourquoi je supplie et requier tous lecteurs les causes et raisons

about sayd contemplated and consydered to have me for to be excused, and ther
dessus dictes contempléez et consideréez mauoir pour excusé, et la

where they shall se the good Homer have ben aslepe to be wylling by good maner
où ilz verront le bon Homère auoir dormy le uouloir par bonne maniere

to wake him, in correctyng the fautes in the whiche by cause of the same he is
esueiller en corrigeant les fautes esuelles a cause de ce il est

fallin, the whiche doynge they shall deserve nat only to be lauded and praysed,
encouru, ce que faisantz ilz mériteront nonseulement destre loués et prisés,

but also in theyr workes and operations taxed and estimed of maner
mais aussy en leurs euures et operations taxés et estimés de maniere

lyke, and to the same answeyng.
reciprocque et corespondent.

ENDE OF THE PROLOGUE.

Page 898

HERE AFTER FOLOWETH THE TABLE OF THIS PRESENT TREATYSE.

This litle worke shalbe devided in two bokes, wherof the fyrst shal have two partes.

In the fyrst part shalbe treated of rules, that is redyng frenche, and what letters shall be lefte unbesoude, and the cause therof.

The seconde parte shalbe of nownes, pronownes, adverbs, participles, with verbes, prepositions, and conjunctions.

Also certayne rules for conjugations.

Item fyve or six maners of conjugations with one verbe.

Item conjugations with two pronownes and with thre and fynally combining or joinyng II verbes togeder.

The second boke shall be of lettres missyves in prose and in ryme.

Also diuerse communications by way of dialoges, to receyve a messenger from the emperour, the frenche kynge, or any other prince.

Also other communications of the propriete of mete, of love, of peas, of warres, of the exposicion of the masse, and what mannes soule is, with the division of tyme, and other conseites.

FINIS.

A PROLOGUE FOR AN INTRODUCTORY.

The thynges that directely expressed maye nat be ought to be declared
Les choses qui a droit exprimer ne se peuuent doibuent estre declareez

by syncopation of sylence, by cause that by sylence one doth answer to many
par sincopacion taciturne, pour ce que par silence on respond a plusieurs

thynges. Syncopation is none other thyng but abreviation of length, and prolixite choses. Sincopation nest aultre chose quabreuiacion de prolixite, et prolixite

is superfluitie of wordes in declaryng a thyng. Wherfore in all est superfluite de paroles en declarant une chose. Pourquoy en toutes

workes one ought to be shorte. We shall begynne this boke than in the name oeuvres on doit estre brief. Nous commencerons ce liure donques ou nom

of God all mighty and shall ende it with the helpe of hym, procedyng by the de Dieu tout puissant et lacheuerons a laide diceluy, procedant par le

counsayle of Orace, whiche is as shorte as possible shalbe. conseil dOrace, qui est le plus brief que possible sera.

Page 899

HERE FOLOWETH THE FYRST BOKE OF SEVYN RULES FOR TO REDE
AND TO PRONOUNCE FRENCH TREWLY.

THE FYRST

is howe the fyve vowels, that is to saye *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, and *v*, shalbe sounded in redyng french.

Ye shal pronounce your *a*, as wyde open mouthed as ye can; your *e*, as ye do in latyn, almost as brode as ye pronounce your *a* in englysshe; your *i*, as sharpe as can be; *o*, as ye do in englyssh, and *v* after the Skottes, as in this worde *gud*. These fyve uowels be consonantes when they receyve nat their full sounde, as in this worde *jamaiz* the fyrst *a* is a uowell, and the seconde is a consonant.

Example of *e*, as *déité* and *magesté*, where bothe *ees* of *deite* be uowels, and the fyrst of *magesté* is a consonant and the seconde is a uowell. Wherfore ye shall understande that the moste parte of *ees* in french be consonantes, save fewe with suche wordes as come out of latyn. Example of consonantes

me, the, hym, that, of, the, do, to say, to put, oure, your,
me, te, se, que, de, le, faire, dire, mectre, nostre, vostre,

wher is never a uowel. All the

ees

that shalbe uowels in this present boke shalbe marked as the dyptong is in latyn, thus

é

.

THE SECONDE RULE.

Also in redyng frenche ye shall leave the last letter of every worde unsounde, endyng in *s*, *t*, and *p*, save of the same worde wherupon ye do pause or rest, for if ye do pronounce every worde by hymselfe, that is to say, restyng upon the same, ye ought for to pronounce and sounde him thorowe. And if any word endyng with an *s*, have the next worde folowyng begynning with a uowell, than shall ye sounde the said *s*, lyke a *z*, as in these wordes *jamaiz aultres* ye shal rede *jamaiz aultre* (never others), as it were but one worde, but if the next worde commyng after the *s* be a consonant, than shall the said *s* remayne unsounde, as in these wordes *jamaiz narés*, (never shall ye have) the *s* of *jamaiz* shall nat be sounde. Provyded alwayes, as is sayde before, that ye do nat pause nor rest upon the worde, for so doyng ye must sounde it parfitely.

Page 900

THE THYRDE RULE.

Whan one worde doth ende with a uowell, and the next folowyng after begyn with another, than the fyrste shalbe unsounde, as in these wordes, but in you have *que en uous*, ye shall rede *quen uous*, and

I me have I the have I him have
je me ay, je te ay, je le ay,
ye shall rede je may, je tay, je lay,

and so of all suche lyke, excepte some wordes whiche be nat used in Fraunce, as *tu as*, *thou hast*. Where bothe uowels must be sounde, howbeit the Picardes sounde it after the sayd rule, sayeng *tas* for *tu as*, *tes* for *tu es*, thou arte. And if ye fynde two *ees* endyng and begynnyng a worde, ye shall leave the tone, as in these wordes,

it is with the well
il te est bien,

ye shall rede il test bien.

And of *e*, and *a*, as in these wordes *que a*, but *te*, ye shall rede *qua*. Of *e*, and *o*, as in these wordes, *que on*, but one, ye shall rede *quon*. Of *a* and *o*, as in these wordes, *pourra on*, may one, ye shall rede *pourran*. And in lyke maner of all other of that termynation.

THE FOURTH RULE.

An *s*, in the begynnynge of a worde hath his full sounde, as dothe appere by these wordes folowyng,

wyse, wylde
sage, sauage, sapient, etc.

but in the myddes beyng eether before a consonant or a uowell, shall be sounded lyke a *z*, as in these wordes

I sayde I dyd I brake I holde peace.
disoie, faisoie, brisoie, taisoie, etc.

THE FYFTH RULE.

Whan *st* dothe come togider in a worde hauing a uowell before it, than the sayde *s* shall remayne unsounde, but it shall encrease the sounde of the sayde uowell, as in these wordes

ye shall rede to wast to taste to haste,
gaster, taster, haster,
gaater, taater, haater.

And myne hoste come agayne anone
mon hoste reuenes tantost:
ye shall rede mon hoothe reuenes tanto:

ye shall neuertheles except al those that be nyghe the latyn, as

to protest to shewe, to withstande:
protester, manifeste, conteste,

and suche lyke, whiche must have the sayd *s*, well and parfitly sounded and pronounced, for it is nat possyble to fynde a rule so generall and infallible to serue for euery worde as was said aboue in the prologue.

Page 901

THE SIXT RULE.

There is in french dyuers wordes, whiche for denotation or signifcation of plurarite dothe ende with an *s*, or with a *z*, for without he same they be synguler nombre, as these wordes and such lyke

worde fyste write a lefe
mot, puing, escript, feullet,

whiche be all synguler nombres: and if ye do adde a *z*, at the latter ende of them, than are they plurell nombres, as

motz, puingz, escriptz, feulletz:

and than shall ye nat sounde the letter before the sayd *z*, redyng

mos, puins, feullés.

And lyke wise whan a worde hath a *p*, or *b*, in the myddes endyng the syllable, ye shall leaue them unsounde, as in these wordes and suche lyke,

ye shal rede dewtie, dette, to write,
debuoir, debte, escripre:
deuoir, det, escrire.

But whan they do begyn the worde or the syllable, than shall they be pronounced, as these wordes,

putte away debated to breke
deboute, debatu, debriser, etc.

THE SEVENTH RULE.

There is two maner of wordes harde for to be pronounced in french. The fyrst is written with a double *ll* whiche must be souned togider, as *lla*, *lle*, *lly*, *llo*, *llu*, as in these wordes,

gave cutte gader lefe bayly fayle

bailla, tailla, ceulle, feuille, bally, fally,

white knele a tymer hamer full of leaves
moulet, engenoulet, mallot, feullu, houllu.

The seconde maner harde to pronounce ben written with *gn*, before a uowell, as *gna, gne, gni, gno, gnu*. As in these wordes

wan dyd blede lyne combe vyne scabbe felowe
gagna, saigna, ligne, pigne, uigne, tigne, compagne,

swell wanton wanton
laigne, mignon, mignarde,

ye shal except many wordes that be so written and nat so pronounced, endyng specially in *e*, as

worthy swanne hyghe corage
digne, cigne, magnanime, etc.

They that can pronounce these wordes in latyn after the Italians maner, as (*agnus, dignus, magnus, magnanimus*) have bothe the understanding and the pronouncynge of the sayde rule and of the wordes. Ye shall fynde many suche among the nownes, uerbes, and aduerbes that hereafter be folowynge, the whiche shall have the double *l*, thus written *ll*, besyde the word and *gn*, besyde the tother.

THE NAMES OF MEMBRES LONGYNG TO MANNES BODY
ASWELL INWARDE AS OUT WARDE.

the heed or chyfe
le chief

the scoull
la teste

the heeres
les cheueulz

Page 902

womens heares
les tresches

the nether chekes
les bajoes

the hole of the necke
la fosse du col

the busshe
la cheuelure

the eare
loreille

the kenel of the necke
la canol du col

the perwyke
la perrucque

the eares
les oreilles

the sholder
lespaule

the heares
ll. la cheuechalle

the mowth
la bouce

the armes
les bras

the forhed
le front

beastes mowthe
la geule

the elbowe
la coude

the temples
les temples

the lypes
les leures

the elbowes
les coudes

the browes
les sourcilz

the tonge
la langue

the fyste
le puing

the visage
le visage

the rouf of the mowth
le palais

the fystes
les puingz

the berde
la barbe

or
ou palet

the hande
la main

the face
le viaire

the teeth
les dentz

the handes
les mains

the face
la face

the gommies
les genciues

the bat of the hande
le dos de la main

the eye or eyes
loeul

the jaws
les machoires

the balle of the hande
la paulme

the eyes
les yeux

the inward jawes
les mandibulles

the balles
les paulmes

the lydde
la paulpiere

the lyddes
les paulpieres

the ball of the eye
la pupille

the nose
le naes

the nose thrilles
ll. les narilles

the chekes
les joes

Page 903

the naile
longle

the nayles
les ongles

the brest
la poictrine

the forke of the brest
la fourcelle

the breste
la mamelle

the brestes
les mamelles

the body
le corps

the wast
le fauz du corpz

the holes under the armes
les esselles

the bely
le uentre

the nauyl
le nombril

the backe
le dos

the chyne
leschine

the rayns
les rains

the buttockes
les fesses

the buttocke
la fesse

the hippe
la hanche

the hippes
les hanches

the chynne
le menton

the throte bo?te
le gosier

the gorge
la gargate

the gorge
la gorge

the necke
le col

the knot of the neck
le neu du col

the nether beerde
la penilliere

the thighe
la cuisse

the thighes
les cuisses

the knee
le genouil

the knees
les genoulz

the hamme
le jaret

the hammes
les jaretz

the legge
la jambe

the legges
les jambes

the chyne boone
la greue

or the backe of
ou le dos de

the legge
la jambe

the calfe of the legge
le pomeau

the ancle
ll. la cheuille

the ancles
ll. les cheuilles

the hele
le talon

the foote
le pied

the feetes
les piedz

the finger
le doigt

the fingers
les doigz

the thombe
le poulce

the thombes
les poulces

the jointe
la jointe

the joyntes
les jointes

the soole
la plante

the sooles
les plantes

the great too
le graunt orteil

the toes
les orteilz

THE INWARD MEMBRES.

the braine
le cerueau

the hering
louye

the sight
la ueue

the smellyng
lofact

the smellyng
le flairer

the taste
le goust

the telynge
le taste

the chawyng
le macer

the swallowyng
laualler

the hert
le ceur

the stomake
lestomac

the galle
le feil

the leuer
le foie

the grynes
les ames

the back of the foote
le dos du pied

the lyver
le gisier

Page 904

the longe
le poulmo

the rybbes
les costes

the hardynesse
la hardiesse

the mylte
lesplene

the bones
les os

the cowardnesse
la couardise

or the mylte
ou la rate

the brethe
lalaine

feblenesse of corage
la lacheté

or mylte
ou ratelle

the spyttell
la saliué

the feare
la peur

the bledder
la uessie

the spyttyng
le crachat

the truthe
la uerité

the kydneyes
gn. les rognons

OTHER NAMES BEYNG
IN MAN.

the leasyng
le mensonge

the uryne
lurine

the soule
lame

the drede
la crainte

the guttes
les boiaulz

the spyrite
lesperit

the ferefulnesse
lespouantement

the small guttes
les intestins

the wytte
le sens

the strength
la force

thinward part of the bely
ll. les entrailles

the wyll
le uoullior

the feblenesse
la foiblesse

the gader
la coree

the wyll
la uoullente

the mansuetude
la debonairété

the blode
le sang

the rayson
la raison

the angrefull disposition
la felonie

the coller
la colere

the memory
la memoire

the malyce
la malice

the melancoly
la melencolie

the understandyng
lentendement

the cruelnesse
la cruauté

the fleame
le flegme

the thought
la pensée

the goodnesse
la bonté

the senewes
les nerfz

the ymagination
limagination

the frowardnesse
la mauuaisté

the ueynes
les uaines

the jugement
le jugement

the peace
la paix

the ueynes of the puls
les arteres

the opynyon
lopinion

the rest
le repos

the pulse
le pulse

the stomake
le courage

the trouble
le trouble

Page 905

the labour
ll. le trauaill

the glotony
la glotonnie

the wysdome
la sagesse

the stedfastnesse
la constance

the sobernesse
la sobrieté

the byrth
la neissance

the unstedfastnesse
la uariabileté

lechery
luxure

the chylhdhode
lenfance

the hatered la hayne	the chastyte la chasteté	the feblenesse la debilité
the frendship lamitié	coueytise conuoitise	the manhood la uirilité
the joye la joye	lyberalytie liberalité	the foulenesse la turpitude
the sorowe la tristesse	auaryce auarice	the honeste lhonesteté
the heuynesse lennuy	waste prodigalité	the insolency linsolence
the rejoyssyng le rejouissement	to go about rychesse ambicion	the stablenes la fermeté
the angre le corous	wylfull pouertie uoluntaire poureté	the bondage la seruitude
the sporte lesbatement	boostyng la uantance	the fredome la liberté
the wrath lire	presumptuous larrogance	the honoure lhonneur
the pacyence la pacience	the truthe in lyueng la preudomie	the shame la honte
the pride lorgeul	the falsehed la faulceté	the rychesse la richesse
the mekenesse lhumilité	the lyfe la uie	the nedynes la poureté
the envy lenuie	the dethe la mort	the sikenes la maladie
the charyte la charité	the youthe la jeunesse	the helth la santé
the dilygence la deligence	the age ll. la uiellesse	the pourete lindigence
the lytell corage la pusillanimité	the ignorauncy lignoraunce	the plente la plenté

Page 906

the plenty labondance	the neesyng lesternuer	the gussettes le goucerons
the nigardnes la chiceté	the snowring le ronfler	the surfyls les ourletz
the rudenes la rudesse	the syghynges le souperer	the seames les coustures
the swyftness la promptitude	syghes soupirs	the kyrtell le corset
the inclynation la propension	the yexynges les sanglous	the krytell la cotelette
facyle inclynation la procliuité	the spytyng le cracher	the petycote la cote simple
the desyre to slepe lassoupissement	to blowe the nose le mouchér	the gowne la robbe
the quyckenesse la uiuacité	the slepyng le dormir	the placharde le placart

the graunt lottroy	the watchyng le ueillier	the cuffes les bonbardes
the denyeng le deniement	the slepe le sompne	the purfyll la bordure
the heate la challeur	the dreamyng le songer	the lynynge la doublure
the coldnesse la froydure	the drinkyng le boire	the furre la fourrure
the drynesse la seicheur	the eatyng le menger	the under gyrdell le demy chaint
the moystnesse lhumidité	the sacyate le saoul	the gyrdell la chainture
the laughyng le rire	the hungry le familleus	the purse la bourse
the wepyng le plourer	THE NAMES OF WOMENS REMENTES.	the pyncase lespinceau
the complaynyng le playndre	the smocke le chemisse	or the case for pynnes ou lespinglier
the lamentyng le lamenter	the coler le colet	the heed atayre lattour
the yexyng le sanglouter	the sleves les manches	the frenche hode le chapperon a plis

Page 907

the bonette le bonnet	the bone grace le moufflet	the showes les soliés
the crispynes les crespines	the knyves les coulteaus	the buskyns les brousequins
the frontler of velvet ll. les beatilles	the beedes les patenostres	the slyppars les pantouffles
the templettes les templettes	the hande kercher lesmouchail	the sheres les forces
the partelet le gorgias	the hande kercher ou mouchoir	the small sheres ou forcettes
the necke kerchef la colerette	the lace le lacz	MENS REMENT.
the kercher le ceuurechief	the small lace le lacet	the sherte la chemisse
the partelet le colet	the combe le pigne	the doublet le pourpoint
the partelet le colier	the lye la lessiue	the coote le seon or say
the brasel le bracelet	the gloves les gantz	the jacquete la jacquete
the tache lesgrappe	the tymble le does	the jacquete le hecqueton
the ringes les aneaulz	the nydel ll. lesquille	the gowne la robbe
the owche la bague	the pynnes les espingles	the partelet le colet

to close the necke kercher
ll. le fermall

a broche
lafficque

an image
limage

the gabardine
la gauardine

the tipet
la cornette

the cloke
le manteau

Page 908

the spanische sworde
la rapiere

the dagar
la dague

the bagge
la gibessiere

the purse
la louiere

the purse
laulmoniere

the bootes
les botes

the bootes
les houseaus

the spores
les esperons

the shyilde
lescu

the paueys
la parme

a great buccler
la taloche

the buccler
le bouclier

the camell
le camiau

the drommadary
le dromadaire

the asse
lasne

the horse
le cheual

and all beestes
et toutes bestes

bearyng sadyls
portant selles

the brusshe to
les espoussettes,
la uerge a

swepe
esterdre

the hooses
les chausses

the garters
les jartiers

the pynson showes
les eschapins

or packes
ou uoiture

have nede
ont mestier

of packe sadyls or of
de batz ou de

saddyys, the whiche
selles, les quelles

have a pomell
a pommeau

backe and boweth
dos et archons

sursyngles
soursangles

and pannels
et paneaus

than the heed
puis la testierre,

stall, reyne, and
resne, et

byttes, make the
mors, font la

bridell
bride

the petrell
le poitral

the gyrthes
les sengles

the styropes
les estries

the styrop ledders
les estriuieres

the crouper
la croupiere

the buckeles
les boucles

the hat
le chapiau

lappe of man
la tocque

the cappe
le bonnet

the hoode
le chaperon

the gyrdel
la chainture

the sworde
lespee

that one can nat
quon ne peult

make nor forge
faire ne forger

without the anuyle
sans lenclume

the fyle the
la lime, le

hammer
marteau

the pyncettes
ll. les tenailles

the coles
les charbons

with the fyre
avec le feu

ayre, water, and
aire, eaue et

erthe, with the
terre, avec le

smyth
marechall

or locker
ou serrurier

THE CHAMBRE.

the bedde
le lict

the bolster
le trauersin

or the bolster
ou le chauet

the pyllowes
ll. les oreilliers

the blankettes
les blanchetz

or fardels
ou fardeau

and the nayles
et les clous

the shetes
les linceulz

Page 909

the couerlette
le couuertoir

the salt saler
la saliere

the confittes
la dragerie

the sparuer
le ciel

the chafyng dysshe
la chauffette

the confections
les confitures

the sparuer
ll. le pauillon

the spones
les cuillieres

the coup borde
le buffet

the curtyns
les courtines

the trenchers
les trenchoirs

the pottes
les potz

the hangyng
la tapisserie

the platters
les platz

the flagons
les flagons

the carpettes
les tapis uelus

the dysshes
les escuelles

the couppes
les couppes

the quyishens
les carriaus

the sawcers
les saussiers

the boles
les tasses

all one
les coissins

the bred
le pain

a genial name for cuppes
les hanapz

the bedde portatyve
le lict de camp

the fleshe
la cher

the gobbelettes
les gobeletz

the bedstede
le chalict

the butter
le beurre

the glasses
les uoires

the borde
la table

the chese
le fromage

and the water
et leau

the trestels
les tresteaus

the egges
les oeufz

for to washe them
pour les rincer

the forme
le banc

the whyte wyn
le uin blanc

the bacin
le bacin

the chayres
les chaieres

the claret
le claret

the ewer
lesguiere

the stools
les escabelles

the rede darke
ll. le uermeill

THE KECHIN.

the forte stoole
le marce pied

the wyne red
le uin rouge

the mayster coke
le sommelier

the table cloth
la nape

ypocras
ypocras

the yoman coke
les cuisinies

the napkyns
les seruiettes

the waffers
les oubliez

gromes of the kechin
uarletz de cuisin

the salt
le sel

the succades
la succad

turne broches
les galopins

Page 910

the pottes
les potz

the sholder
lespoule

the pygge
le cochon

the pannes
les poelles

the gygot, a brest
le gigot

HAUKES OF PRAY
SYXTENE KYNDES.

the caudrons
les chaudrons

the chyne
leschine

the egle
laigle

the spyttes

the rybbes

gerfaucon

les hastiez	les costes	gerfau
the spyttes les broches	the necks le colet	the tercell gerk
the morters les mortiers	the trotters les trottings	sacres sacres
the pestels les pestiaus	the lambe gn. lagneau	the tercell sacretz
the serces les tamis	the heed la teste	falcons faulcons
the stamels les estamines	the gader or nombles la couree	the tercell tierceletz
the instrument for to larde le lardeur	the skynne la piau	lenners lainers
the bacon le lard	the ramme le belin	lanerettes laneretz
the mustarde la moustarde	the ewe la brebis	meryllons ll. esmerillons
the grene sauce la sausse uerde	the he gotte le bouc	hobbeys hobriaus
the gambon le jambon	the she gotte la chieuvre	goshaukes austours
the befe le beuf	the swyne or hogge le pourceau	tercels tierceletz
the bull le tor	the boore le uerrart	uperhaukes esparuiers
the cowe la uache	the boore le uer	muskettes mouchetz
the calfe, vele le ueau	the wylde boore le senglier	crystrels cretreulles
the mutton le mouton	the sowe la truye	the thrusshe mauluis

Page 911

the cocowe coucou	the henne la poulle	the crane la grue
cocowe cocou	the henne le geline	the bustarde lautarde
glede mellans	the chekyns les poucins	the pecoke le paon
puttockes escoufles	the cocke le coc	the swanne le signe
the blewe kyte faulz perdrier	the capon le chappon	the goose louoye
bussardes busartz	the partryche la perdris	wylde souuage
bruhiers bruhiers	the yong partryches les pertriaux	tame domenche
greater than the egle uoultaires	the fesaunt le faisant	the barnacle le barnacle
the ducke oule	the dove	the gander

le duc chahuan	le coulomb	le jar
the oule le chahuan	the rynged dove le ramier	the goslynges les oisons
the lytell oule la chouette	the stocke dove le creuset	the heyron le heron
the ravyn le corbiau	the turtle dove la tourtrelle	the shoveler le trublet
the crowe la cornaille	the pygions les pigeons	theggret laigret
the highwale lespec	the cormorande le cormorain	the byttour le buto
the unthatche le picmars	the wodcocke la becasse	the storke la cigoin
the dawe le canne	the quayle la quaille	the malarde le malard
the pye la pie	the larke lalouette	the malarde le canart
the pye lagace	the plouuer le pluuiier	the ducke la canne
the jaye le jay	the lapwyng le uaniau	the ducke lanette
Page 912		
the ducklyns les annetons	the nyghtyngale gn. le rossignol	melons melons
the coote la joudelle	rocyn redbrest la robaille	gourdes gourdes
the coote la blarie	the wrenne le rotelet	coucumbers coucombres
the teyle le cercelle	FRUTES.	granades grenades
the starlyng lestourneau	cherys cherises	orenges orenges
the star lesprohon	small cherys guingues	openarses mesles
the felde fare la griue	great cherys gascongnes	medlers neffles
the osyll le merle	small cherys merises	chestayns gn. chatangnes
the sparowe le passereau	[missing] cormes	walnottes nois
the sparowe le moisson	[missing] sorbes	fylberdes nois franches
the fynche le pinchon	raspyse franboises	small nottes noisettes
the blewe back and redbrest la pioue	gose berrys groiselles	WHYT MEATES.
the wagtayle la bergieronnet	strawberys freses	custardes dariolles
the wagtayle	apples	flawnes

le hochecul	pommes	flans
the grene fynche le frion	perys poires	tartes tartes
the grene fynche la verdiere	plummes prunes	pasteys pastés
the gold fynche la cardinotte	dampsons prunes de damas	frytters bignetz
the lynnet la linotte	peches pesches	VENESON.
the coldmouse la messange	mulberys moures	the harte le cerf
Page 913		
the hynde la biche	carpes carpes	makerell macreaus
the bucke le dain	haddockes cableaus	muskels moules
the doe la daine	myllers thombes caboceaus	whytynges melans
the robucke le saillant	congers congres	mullettes muletz
the robucke la capreolle	coccles cocques	the see swyne marsouin
the robucke le cheuriau	crabbes crabbes	oysters hiutres
the hare le leure	dogge fysshe chien de mer	perches perces
the watte le leurart	cheuyns chieuennes	plaise plais
the conys les connis	shrimpes creuettes	ray or thornbacke rayes
the rabettes les lapriaus	porpasse daulphin	roches roches
the rabettes les lapins	sturgyons esturgeons	husses roussettes
FYSHES.	smeltes espelans	rochettes rougetz
alose or shaddes aloses	creuice deau douce escreuice	salmons saulmons
eeles ll. anguilles	goienne gougeons	solles solles
whelkes balaines	crevyce of the see houmars	tonyne toninnes
barbyls barbeaus	whyte heryng harenc blanc	tenches tences
base bars	reed heryng harenc sor	gournardes tumbes
breames bresmes	lampreys lamproiez	trowtes treute
pykes	loches	turbottes

brocetz

loches

turbot

Page 914

menews
uerron

chestayne tree
chataignier

raspis tre
francoisier

[missing]
uendoise

chery tree
cherisier

ashe
fresne

TREES.

hony socle tre
eiebrou

small chery tre
guinguier

the almande tre
amandier

all one
chieurefeul

the same agayne
badeolier

thelder
aulne

tyller of a crosbowe
cormier

wylde cherys
merisier

hau thorne bearing
aubespin portant

cornus
ll. cornillier

great chery tre
gascongner

the beris
curelles

oke beryng
chesnes portant

gowsbery tre
groiselier

wodde, tymber
bois, fust

acornes
glandz

grenade tre
grenadier

tymber fewell
mairien laigne

cipre tree
cipres

browme
genistres

fagottes
faceaus, fagotz

quyne aple tre
coingz

the pocke tre
gaiiaqz ou eban

logges
buches

palmier
datiers

holly or holme
houll

kyndlyng fagottes
bourreez

maples
errables

jue
yerre

barberis
barberis

thornes blacke
espines noire

jenoper
jenopure

boxe
buis

and whyte
et blanche

ewe
iff

heyth
bruiere

eglentine
esglentier

firres or gost
songniarins

busshe
buissons

biche or the tre
fou ou haitre

ou rauennes

byrche
bouill

that beareth
qui porte

the bay tre
laurier

a place full of hasels
couldrieres

the maste
foynes

more bery tre
mourier

hasell
couldre

figge tre
figuier

medler
meslier

Page 915

opyners tre
nefflier

wylowes
saus

all one
lobis

walnot tre
noier

serues tre
seruiers

ryse
rifz

basels
noisiers

elder tre
sehuc

fetche
uesche

oliue tre
oliuiers

aspes
trembles

hempe sede
canebuise

wylows or osiers osiers	tron a lytell tre trosne	line side linuuy
orange tre orengiers	vynes uignes	rape side nauette
elmes ourmes	cornes bledz	mostard syde senneué
aple tre pommiers	whette fourment	strawe estrain
peerre tre poiriers	rye seigle	straw or hay feurre
plomme tre pruniers	daruell iuraie	hey foyn
peche tre peschiers	all one jargerie	litter or chaff paille
pinaple tre pins	all one or zizany droe	pease strawe pesas
plane planes	ootes auaine	mele flour farine fleur
poplar tre poupeliers	barley myll orge myll	branne tercou
rosiers rosiers	beanes febues	alle one son
breeres rouces	peeses pois	trowgh mayt
rosmarie rosmarins	great peeses cices	paste levyn paste leuain
fys sapins	small peeses ll. lentilles	to knede pestrir
the place of wilowes saussoie	small beanes lupins	ouuen four

Page 916

to put in the ouuen enfourner	of the see in the masculin marin	a ferry bote bac
{ white { blanc { brede { black pain { bis { { brown { brun	the tyde marée	a square bote bacquet
	springe sourjon	a lytell barge chalan
	springe sourse	all one santine
NAMES OF OFFICERS REGALLES.	fountayne fontaine	a whery cymbe
the great master le grand maistre	riuer riuiere	to suche flocke a tel aumaille
the steward le maistre dhostel	the shawre riue	suche shepherde tel bergier
the great chamberlayn le chambrier	a furde le gué	{ of shepe { de brebis {
the second chamberlin le chamberlain	the poole le uiuier	flocke { of gotes ung { de chieures

the cuppe bearer le echanson	the great poole lestant	tropeau { { of kyne { de uaches { { of mares { de jumentz
the seuer le pannetier	the hole la fosse	
sergeantes officers le somellier	the dykes les fosses	stoude of stalons haras destalons
master of horses le grant escuier	the broke le rieu	of coltes de poulains
the squier under him lescuier descurie	the broke or chenell le ruisseau	PROPERTES OF BEESTES.
the great hownter le grant ueneur	cysterne citerne	a man dothe syng ung homme chante
the master of hawkes le grant faulconner	a shyppe nauire	an asse ung asne recane
the master of the forest le verdier	a barge nef	a cowe lowes une uache mugist
the see la mer	a shyppe bote scaffe	a shepe bletes une brebis beste
of the see la marinne	a lytell bote nacelle	a wolfe and a ung loup et ung

Page 917

dogge houles chien hulent	brefe brief, briefue	plentie foison
the cat and the lyon le chat et le lion	great grand, grande	inough assés
grynneth groulent	goose gros, grosse	ynough lytell assés pou
a hogge ung pourceau	dimynutyve groset, grossette	all one assés petit
groneth grongne	small or sclender gresle	to moche trop
a chorle hommeth ung uillain	fatte gras, grasse	more lesse plus moins
or grudgeth hongne	thynne delié tenue	nygarde escars, escarse
a dogge barketh ung chien abaie	small menu menue	softe mol molle
a foxe and ung renart et	thycke espes espesse	harde dur dure
an otter panteth ung putois glatissent	thycke or rype drue drue	duret durette
the serpentess hysses les serpens siblent	lyght legier legiere	lyar menteur mentresse
the byrdes les oiseauz	hevy pesant pesante	swete douls douce
chermes and chattereth jargonent et degoisent	holowe creu creuse	bytter amer amere
the man is well lhomme est bien	hole or sounde entier entiere	bytternesse amertume

shaped, that hath the fourmé, qui a le	solude massif massifue	vyle ord orde
troncke ryght, and the tronc droit, et le	streight estroit estroite	foule sal salle
remenaunt lyke tige semblable	large large largeur	spotted souillé souillée
longe long, longue	ynough plenté	vylayne villain villaine
shorte court, courte	all one prou	craver truand truande

Page 918

begger belitre, belitresse	wanton mignon mignart	hore paillarde
lepre pouacre infect	wanton woman mignarde	hore monger ribauld
knave coquin coquine	lyar mensongier mensongiere	hoore ribaulde
begger kemand kemande	jester bourdeur bourderesse	hoore monger putier
boy gyrle garcon garce	beggler trompeur trompeuse	hoore putain
boy gyrle hardeau hardele	jangler cacqueteur cacquetresse	baude macreau macquerelle
glotton gourmand gourmande	reprover ramponeur ramponeresse	a thefe laron
malapert cocard cocarde	hore monger paillard	a she thefe laronnesse
lykerous friand friande		

SALUTATYONS IN FRENCH, WHICHE MAY BE TOUNED TWO MANER WAYES,
AS WHAN YE SAYE IN ENGLISSHE, GOD GYVE YOU GOOD MOROWE,
YE MAY SAYE, GOOD MOROWE GYVE YOU GOD,
AS YE SHALL SE HERE FOLOWYNGE.

good morowe
bon jour

good yere
bon an

good evenyng
bon vespre

good evyn
bon soir

good nyght
bonne nuyt

good meetyng
bon encontre

good joye
bon joie

Page 919

me	bonne vie et longue	me		
the	good fortune	the		
te	bonne fortune	te		
God	hym gyve good prosperyte	and to you	him gyve	God
Dieu	luy doint bonne prosperité	et a vous	luy doint	Dieu
us	well to prospere	us		
nous	bien prosperer	nous		
you	good lucke	you		
vous	bon heur	vous		
them	good begynnyng	them		
leurs	bon commencement	leurs		
	good meane			
	bon moien			
	good ende, and well to fynisse			
	bon fin, ou bien acheuer			
	well to lyve, well to dye			
	bien uure, bien mourir			
	good helthe			
	bonne sante			
	paradyse at the ende			
	paradis en la fin			
	the hole, or the fulfylling	of your desyres		
	lentier ou l'accomplissement	de vos desirs		

God kepe,	God blesse,	God save,	God gyde you.
Dieu gart,	Dieu benie,	Dieu sauue,	Dieu uous conduye.

God be within, God be your helpe, God be wyllynge to helpe you,
 Dieu soit ceans, Dieu vous soit en aide, Dieu vous veulle aider,

God kepe you from yvell and trouble, I bydde you farwell, God be with you,
 Dieu vous garde de mal et dencombrier, a dieu vous dis, a dieu soiez,

I take my leave of you, farwell tyll we se agayne.
 adieu sans adieu, adieu jusques au reueoir.

Page 920

THE GENERATION OF COLOURS WITH THE BLASON OF THEM.

Colour is lyght incorporate in a body visyble pure and clene. There
 Couleur est lumiere incorporée en ung perspectif pur et nect. Ilz

ben two dyfference of perspectyves, the one is pure, separate of erthlynesse,
 sont deux difference de perspectifz, lung est pur, séparé de terrestréité,

and the tother is spotted by the same and myxed lyght is devyded in
 et lautre est coinquiné par icelle et mixtioné lumiere est

four partes, that is to say clere, darke plentuous or scant, whiche is to understande
 quadri-partite, cest a dire clere, obscure habondante et rare, qui est a entendre

great or small. Wherefore it appereth that thre thynges dothe cause
 grande ou petite. Pourquoi il appert que trois choses causent

the essence of whythnesse, that is to say, clerenesse with habundaunce of the same,
 lessence de blancheur, cest a scaouir, clarté avec multitude dicelle,

and a body visyble clene and pure. And thre thynges lykewyse ben cause of
 et ung perspectif pur et nect. Et trois choses semblablement sont cause de

blacke colour, it is to say, lyght, darke with scarsnesse of it, and
 couleur noir, cest a scaouir, lumiere, obscure avec paucite dicelle, et

perspectyve unclene. And by this is open the sayeng of Arystotell, and of Avenrois,
 perspectif impur. Et par ce est esclarcy le dict d'Aristote et de Avenrois,

whiche have put blacknesse for privation and whythnesse for habytude
 qui ont mis noircheur pour priuacion et blancheur pour habitude

or forme. And knowe ye that in these two colours lyeth all the others.

ou forme. Et sachés quen ces deux coulleurs gisent toutes les aultres.

mournyng deul	blacke noir	sable
mekenesse humilite	whyte blanc	sylver argent
pride orgeul	reed rouge	geule
love amoureux	grene verd	sinople
stedfast constant	blewe bleu	asure

Page 921

gyle deception	darke blewe pers	
werynes fatygation	tawny tauné	
possessyon jouissance	yelow jaulne	
hoope esperance	gray gris	
magesté	purple pourple	
cherité	blody colour sanguin	
trahison	vyolette violet	
	flour of peche tree fleur de pescier	
dissymulation	carnatyon carnation	
chaungeable changeant		
pale pasle	pale blesme	darke colour obscur
deed colour coulleur morte	horse flesshe cher de cheual	

HERE FOLOWETH DYVERS REASONS WITH SOME STRANGE WORDES
FOR INTRODUCTION OF THE FRENCH TONGE.

Out sette the hevynesse of slepe vayne and longe, a quyete slepe
Hors mis lentomissement du somne vain et long, ung taisible dormir

is right necessary and delycious.
est tres necessaire et delicieus.

A man doutfull and suspect of jelous is sone converted and tourned in
Ung homme douteus et soupeconeus est tost conuerty et tourné en

smerte.
cusancon.

Page 922

A man alre dy luke warme in deedly hete, kyndled of angre and
Homme desja tiéde en mortelle chaleur, embrasé de corous et

madde of dispayre.
forsené de désespoir.

A goodly lady, meke, trymmed, curreysey: damosell stedfast, symple,
Dame gaillarde, benigne, cointe, courtoise: damoiselle constant, symple,

chaste, shamefast and honest.
chaste, pudique et honeste.

A woman dishonest, redy to fall, shamelesse, wanton, subtyle, paynted
Femme impudicque, lubricque, affrontée, mignarde, affaitée, fardée

and disceyvable.
et rusée.

A gyrl e havyng laughyng eyes, full of swete promyse, bearyng wytnesse
Une garce aiant yeulx riantz, plains de doulx promettre, faisant foy

of a wanton wyll.
dung voulloir feminin.

He is worthy of prayse, whiche enforceth him to gete by vertue greater
Il est digne de louenge, qui senforce dacquerer par vertu plus haulte

lyght, for of it to sparcle the beames through all the worlde.
lucence pour en espandre les rais par tout le monde.

It is folly to set our trust in thynges whiche shall fall sythe that we knowe
Cest folie de nous fier ez choses qui cherront puisque cognoissons

selfely the soveraygne lyghtnesse to be darked of a lyght cloude.
neiz les souuerains resplendisseurs estre obscurciez dune legiere nuée.

O fortune, sorowe encreasyng, and slombryng all delyces with great blame
O fortune, doulleur aggrauant, et soupissant tous delices, a grant tort

a body by a lytell immoderate colere, doth angre hymself agaynst
une personne par ung petit de colere immodérée, se indigne contre

his frende, at the lest without a faute goyng before.
son amy, au moins sans prealable offence.

It is shame to a noble person with his strength to darke his honour
Cest honte a une noble personne selon sa force obscurcir son honneur

by his shame.
par ses hontes.

Page 923

If the humayne inclynation, whiche is wont for the most parte to refuse that
Se lhumaine propension, qui seult pour la plus part refuser ce

which one to him doth ministre for most necessary, is nat somewhat restrayned,
quon luy administre pour plus necessaire nest aulcunement cohibée,

scante shalbe able in any scyence to profyete.
a paine pourra en aulcune science prouffiter.

We be right nygh cleuyng the one to the other, bycause of naturall
Nous sommes de pres adherentes les ung des aultres, a cause de naturelle

inclynation, specially havyng symilytude of maners togyder.
procliuité, signament aiantz confirmité de meurs ensemble.

Those whiche by dignyties ben shewed above others ought to then
Ceulz qui par dignites sont prééminence par dessus les aultres deuerioient

sample of God, to put downe their pride and highnesse.
selon Dieu, rabaisser leur crestes et haultesses.

To do the contrary is an infortunate accident springyng of malyce, and
Faire au contraire est ung fortuit accident procedant de malice, et

yeldyng a man right dull, wherfore for nat to be gainsayeng and
rendant ung homme fort empos, pour quoy pour non estre restif et

refusyng good counsayle: it is farre better to sustayne a good quarell,
oppugnant bon conseil, trope mieulx vault soubstenir bonne querelle,

than to yelde hymselfe in suche trouble.
que de soy rendre en telle berelle.

Pronownes devyded by the sixe articles of declynation, both synguler and plurell nombre. And these that ende in *a*, as *ma, ta, sa, la*, ben all femynyn. And all those that dothe ende in *on*, and in *e*, as *mon, ton, son; me, te, se, le*, ben all masculyne. And *mien, tien, sien*, synguler nombre and masculyn, *miens, tiens, siens; mes, tes, ses*, plurell nombre and masculyn. *Mienne, tienne, sienne, singuler; miennes, tiennes, siennes*, plurell nombre and femynyn. But there ben certayne names of the femynyn, whiche do requyre the pronownes masculyns that must be excepted, as *mon ame, mon hotesse*, and suche lyke: where both *ame* and *hotesse* ben femynyn gender, and *mommasculyn*. And *me, te, se*, ben indifferent, as in these wordes:

he (she) sayth to me, he (she) saith to the, he (she) saith to him;
il, (elle) me dit, il (elle) te dit, il (elle) se dit;

where *me, te, se*, serve

Page 924

I, of me, to me, at me, o me,
bothe for the masculyn and femynin. Je, de moy, a moy, a me, a moy, o moy,
for me, to me, of me. our, we, ours; of ours, to us,
pour moy, a moy, de moy. Plurell, nos, nous, nostres; les nostres, a nous,
by our. for Thou, of the, to the; by the: o thou,
par nos. O nous, o nos, pour nous. Tu, de toy, a toy; par te, par toy: o tu, o toy:
by the. your, you, of yours; to you, by your, o ye: by you. He
par toy. Plurell, vos, vous, des vostres; a vous, par vos, o vous: pour vous. Il
she, he, him; that same the same, that same, that or this. They, they,
elle; cil, luy; celui, celle, icelle, icelluy, cestuy, ceste. Ilz, ceulx, elles,
them, those. What, howe, which, the which, of whom, to have.
celles, icelles, eulz, iceulz. Que, qui, quel, lequel, laquelle, de qui, a cui,
by whom, the whiche. My, myne: to my, of my, myne: for
par quel, quelz, laquelle, lesquelles. Mon, mien: a mon, de mon, mien: pour
me, for my: for myne: o my, o myne, for me, for
me, pour mon: pour le mien, par le mien: o mon, o my, o mien: pour me, pour
myne, for Plurell nombre, Thy, my, his: thy, my, his:
mien, pour mon. Mes, miens, mienne, miennes, Ta, ma, sa: tes, mes, ses:
thyne, myne, his:
tiens, miens, siens: miennes, tiennes, siennes.

Example for the femynin:

Ma mere, ma seur, ma maistresse, ma cousine:
Ta mere, ta seur, ta maistresse, ta cousine:
Sa mere, sa seur, sa maistresse, sa cousine:
La mere, la seur, la maistresse, la cousine.

Example howe the pronowne masculyne shal be applyed as

Mon pere, mon frere, mon maistre, mon cousin:
Ton pere, ton frere, ton maistre, ton cousin:
Son pere, son frere, son maistre, son cousin:
Le pere, le frere, le maistre, le cousin, and mes, tes, ses, les, for bothe plurell.

Also there be two pronownes, that ben pronounced in french by syncopation, as
the same and that same:
cestuy cy et cestuy la:

for the femynine: ceste cy et ceste la:
where ye shall take but the last syllable of them, sayeng
stuicy, stuyla: stecy, stela.

PREPOSITIONS.

Nyghe, nyghe: towarde, towarde: for, by, up, downe, above, under
Pres, joucte: enuers, deuers: pour, par, sus, jus, dessus, dessoubz:

Page 925

afore, before, agaynst, with, to, to the, of the, of, at this syde,
auant, deuant, contre, en contre: auec, a, au, du, de, deca,
beyonde.
dela.

CONJUNCTIONS.

If, if, and,
Sy, se, et, etc.

Here foloweth the adverbs, and howe ye shall turn, and forme an adverbe from englisshe into
frenche, and specially those that signifye qualities, takyng this syllable *ly* from them, and addyng
ment for it, as in these wordes folowyng:

propre }
 parfaite }
 honeste }
 habondant }
 cordial }
 prompte }
 incessante }
 real }
 instante }
 due } ment
 commune } ly
 signant }
 competente }
 reuerente }
 decente }
 couarde }
 harde }
 loial }
 condicional }
 compendieuse }

OTHER ADVERBES
IN GENERALL.

this day
huy

all this day
meshuy

in this day
au jourdhuy

yester day
hiér

before yester day
auant hiér

Page 926

yere while
orains

nowe
ades

at this tyme
a ceste heure

somtyme
jadis

tyme paste
temps fust

than
lors

from than
des lors

at that tyme
alors

for that tyme
pour lors

for all that
toutesfois

always
toutteuoies

many tymes
maintefois

the tother day
lautre hiér

to morowe
demain

the day after
lendemain

after to morowe
appres demain

from hens forth
desormais

ones agayne
derechief

from hens forth
dicy en auant

from hens forwarde
de la en auant

this yere
ouan

al this yere
mesouan

not long a gone
nagaires

whyle it was
tandis

always
toudis

ever
tousjours

never
jamais

for ever
a jamais

never syns
oncques puis

never more
oncques mais

than
donques

at that tyme
adonques

alredy
desja

unto this
jusques cy

unto that
jusques la

but lytel agone
depuis nagare

{ lytel
{ petit
{
sith { lytel
depuis { pou
{
{ lytel
{ peu

of tyme
de temps

anone
tost

anone or sone
tantost

incontynent
incontinent

by and by
cy pris cy mis

nowe maintenant

{ up
{ sus
{
now { here
ore { ca
{
{ there
{ la

in maner
en sorte

in a facyon
en fachon

of facyon
de fachon

in suche wyse
tellement

as it was
quellement

almost
quasy

natwithstandyng
nonobstant

withstandyng
obstant

natwithstandyng
non pourtant

nat neverthesse
non pourquant

neverthesse
neant mains

howbeit
combien

oftentymes souuentefois	moche moult	all beit ja soit
at somtyme a la fois	right or most tres	as comme
many tymes pluisieurs fois	in maner de maniere	howe, and howe moche comment
betyme parfois	in so moche en tant	what quoy
somtyme aulcunnefois	in the meane whyle entretant	to what a quoy
in the meane tyme endementiers	duryng that tyme ce pendant	of what de quoy
duryng the tyme entandis	of maner de sorte	in what en quoy

Page 927

for what pour quoy	in sothe en uray	trewe man preudhomme
upon what sur quoy	for truthe pour uerité	trewe woman preude femme
as what come quoy	for sothe pour uray	yare so aincois ainsy
selfely mesmement	of truthe de uerité	otherwyse aultrement
farre loing	of sothe de uray	also aussy
a longe whyle longuement	trewly urayment	quickely uitement
more late plus tard	veritably veritablement	goodly bonnement
to soone or tymely trop tempre	in my God en mon Dieu	betyme tempre
ADVERBES OF SWERYNG.	in good lucke en bon omen	tymely temprement
i, so ouy, sy	by the faith of par la foy de	early matin
no, nay non, nenny	fayre women belles femmes	at the prick of day au point du jour
in earnes a certes	I you assure je vous assure	the dawing of the day a laube du jour
for earnes pour certes	I promyse you je vous promectz	at the dayeng a lajourner
of earnes de certes	I certifye you je vous certifie	at the cockes crowynge au chant du coc
in certayne a certain	without any faute sans faulte	at pryme a prime
for certayne pour certain	in my trewth en ma uerité	at thirde hour a heure de tierce
of certayne de certain	in my loyaltie en ma loyauté	at noone a none

certainly
certainement

in my worthynesse
en ma prudommie

at mydde day
a mydy

in trewth
en uerité

by my holynesse
par ma sainteté

at evynsong
a vespre

Page 928

at evenyng
au soir

at the sonne settinge
a soleil couchant

at the day
au jour

betwene lyght and dark
entre chien et loup

at mydnyght
a mie nuyt

at the nyght
a la nuyt

ADVERBES OF NOMBRES, WITH THEIR DIRIVATYVES, WHERE THE LONGEST
OF TWO BEYNG LYKE IS FOR THE FEMYNNE, AND THE TOTHER
MASCULYNE: AND BOTHE OF ONE SIGNIFYCATION.

UNG I

fyrst, fyrst,
emprunt, premier

fyrstly, one
premierment, ung, une

onely, evyn,
unie, unicque, uniement, uny,

evenly,
union, unie, uniement, unite,

of one voyce, of variable signification.
uniuocque, equiuocque.

onely all onely
seul, seulle, seulement, seullet,

solytary.
seullette, solitaire.

DEUX II

seconde, seconde,
deusiésme: second, seconde,

double, doubled,
double, doublé, doublée,

doublenesse,
dualité, duplicité, doublement,

secondary, parted in two.
secondement, bipartit.

TROIS III

thyrde, thirdly,
tiers, tierce, tiercement,

the thirde,
troisiéme, trinité,

all one,
ternil, triangle, triplicité,
triple, terciane, tripartit.

QUATRE IIII

fourth, the fourth,
quart, quarte, quatriesme,

fourthly,
quartement, quaternité,

the fourth parte, square,
quadril, quarré, quarrée,

four cornarde,
quadrangle,

four double, a crosse way,
quadruple, quarefour,

the quartayne, forty,
quartaine, quarantaine,

forty or lent, lent.
quadragesime, quaresme.

CINQ V

fyfth, fyfthly,
quint, quinte, quintement,

the fyfth, of fyve,
cinquiesme, quintuplice,

pentecost, whit sonday.
cinquesme.

Page 929

SIX VI

the sixte sixtely
sixt, sixte, sixtement,

of sixe, sixe cornarde
sextil, sextangle, sisiéme, sexagesime.

SEPT VII

the seventh seventhly,
septiesme, septiesment,

ones sevyn, in sevyn
septaine, septuplice,

TRAISE XIII

the thirteenth
traisiéme.

QUATORSE XIII

the fourteenth
quatorsiéme

QUINSE XV

the fyftenth
quinsiéme.

SAISE XVI

sevyn corners.
septangle, septuagesime.

HUIT VIII

the eight
huitaine, huitiésme
huitiémement

NEUF IX

the nynth nyne
neuuiésme, neuuayne,

nynthly
neuuiémement

DIX X

tenne
dix, disiésme,

is he that hath charge of x men.
desinier, disayne.

ONSE XI

theleventh
onsiésme onsaine.

DOUSE XII

twelfthly
dousiésme, dousaine.

the sixtenth
saisiésme

DIX SEPT XVII

the sevententh
dix septiésme

DIX HUIT XVIII

the eightenth
dishuitiésme.

DISNEUF XIX

the nyntenth
disneuuiésme

VINGT XX

twenty the twenteth
vintaine, vingtiésme

TRENTE XXX

the thirteth, thirtie
trentiesme, trentaine

QUARANTE XL

the fourteth
quarantiésme

CINQUANTE L

acompte of fyftie the fyfteth
cincquantaine, cincquantiésme.

Page 930

SOISSANTE LX

the sixteth threscore.
soissantieme, soissantaine.

SEPTANTE LXX

the sevyntheth
septantiésme

OCTANTE LXXX

the eighteth
octantiésme

NONANTE XC

the nynteth
nonantiésme

CENT C

hundreth, the hundreth,
centaine, centiésme,

the hundredeth, lykewyse centeniér, centurion.

DEUX CENS CC

TROIS CENS CCC

QUATRE CENTZ CCCC

CINQ CENTZ V. C.

SIX CENTZ VI. C.

SEPT CENTZ VII. C.

HUIT CENTZ VIII. C.

NEUF CENTZ IX. C.

MIL. A THOUSANDE

DIX MILE X. M.

CENT MILE C. M.

UNG MILION M. M.

FORMATYON OF THE INDICATYVE PRESENT TENSE.

Here after foloweth the maner, howe one shall make and fourme the present of the indicatyve or shewyng mode, of the verbes folowyng.

The maner to fourme the present of the verbes infynityve mode, here after folowyng, is: that all those that ende in *er*, puttyng the *r* away, and makyng the *e* a consonant, ye shall have the present of the indicatyve, as in these wordes: *parler, appeller, appaiser, appuier*, etc.; puttyng *r* away, ye have: *parle, appelle, appaise; appuie*: sayeng, *japelle, tu appelle, il appelle, nous appellons, vous appellez, ilz appellent*. Ye shall neverthelesse except some verbes defectyves, as *aller* that do make, *je voy, tu vas*, in the present, and such lyke.

Also all suche as have *d* in the last syllable, ye shall leave all the letters commynge after the *d*, and shall adde *s*, or *z* to it: ye shall have the plurell nombre of them, as in those wordes *tordre*, *mordre*, *prendre*, *attaindre*, *auaindre*, and such lyke, puttyng *s* or *z* to the *d*: ye shall have *tordz*, *mordz*, *prendz*, *attainz*, *auaindz*: howbeit that ye shall nat sounde the sayde *d*, accordyng to the sixte rule in the begynnyng of this worke.

Also all those that doth ende in *ir*, as *tenir*, *uenir*, with all them that be dirivate of them: as *contenir*, *maintenir*, *soubstenir*, *preuenir*, *reuenir*, *paruenir*, *deuenir*, and such lyke, must be all ended in *iens*, as *tiens*, *viens*, *contiens*,

Page 931

maintiens, *soubstiens*, *preuiens*, *reuiens*, *paruiens*, *deuiens*. Sayeng: *je tiens*, *tu tiens*, *il tient*, *nous tenons*, *vous tenes*, *ilz tiennent*. There is another sorte endyng in *ir*, as *conuertir*, *assoupir*, *appourir*, *attendrir*, *benir*, *bannir*, etc. the whiche chaungyng the *r* in *s*, ye have *conuertis*, *assoupis*, *appouris*, *benis*, *bannis*; sayeng: *je bannis*, *tu bannis*, *il bannist*, *nous bannissons*, *vous bannisses*, *ilz bannissent*; and lykewyse of the tothers. Also there must be many except, as *consentir*, *assentir*, *mourir*, *querir*, *dormir*, whiche do make their present: *je consens*, *je assens*, *je meurs*, *je quiers*, *je dors*, *tu dors*, *il dort*, *nous dormons*, *vous dormes*, *ilz dorment*.

Also there is two other that doth ende in *oir*, the tone hath an *a*, in the penultyme syllable, as *auoir* and *scauoir*; whiche do make *ay* and *scay* in the present. The tother maner hath lyke termynation without an *a*, as *appercevoir*, *devoir*, *pourvoir*, *concevoir*, *decevoir*, whiche do make their present, *japercoy*, *je doy*, *je pouruoy*, *je concoy*, *je decoy*; how be it *ualloir* and *uolloir* must be except which do make in the present *je vaulz*, and *vouloir*, *je veulz*, *tu ueulz*, *il ueult*, *nous uoulons*, *uous uoules*, *ilz ueulent*.

Also there is another sorte endyng in *e*, in the infinitive, as,

	saying,	laughyng,	redyng,	frieng,
	dire,	rire,	lire,	frire, etc.
which make in their present,	say,	laugh,	rede,	frye;
	dis,	ris,	lis,	fris;

sayeng, *je lis*, *tu lis*, *il list*, *nous lisons*, *vous lises*, *ilz lisent*.

Also there ben others endyng in *ore*, as *clore*, *shitte*, with all his compost, that is to saye, *disclore*, *unshitte*, *forclore*, *shitte out*, etc. whiche do make in their present, *clos*, *declos*, *forclos*, etc. and for cause that rules ben infinites, and that they ben more necessary for the teacher than for the lernar, I suppose that those above sayd ben sufficyent for the indicative present.

It is to be noted that in the frenche tongue is but two cojugacions: the first shal be discerned and knowen by the first persone plurel nombre of the present in the shewyng moode, for where the sayd fyrst persone hath no *s* in the seconde sillable before his termination or ende, than it is of the

	we love,	we have,	we bette,	we gyve,
first, as in these verbes,	aymons,	auons,	batons,	donons,

with such lyke; and where there is an *s* begynning the last syllable of the forsaid fyrst persone, than it is of the second, as in these verbes, *baisons*, *taisons*, *brisons*, *faisons*, *disons*, *lisons*, *pensons*, etc.

Page 932

Ye shal note lykewyse that in the indicative mode ye have for the moste parte, foure preterites, that is to say, the imperfect, parfect and indiffinitive with the plusperfect, whiche ben comunely founde in all verbes save in them that ben defectives, as it apereth by this verbe,

	I say,	thou sayest,
	je dis,	tu dis,
wherfore the preterit imperfyte is:	I dyde say;	
	je disoie;	
the perfect,	I sayde,	
	je deis;	
the indiffynitive,	I have sayd;	
	jay dit;	
the plusperfect,	I had sayd.	
	jauoie dit.	

Nevertheles for the most part there is no difference in englysshe betwene the perf. and imperf. that is to say, betwene *I dyd say*, and *I sayd*: but bycause it is otherwise in french, I must use the said difference.

Ye shall forme the preterit imperf. in all verbes of both conjugations by the fyrst person plurell nombre, turnyng this syllable *ons*, whiche is in every verbe, in *oie* for the fyrst conjugation: and *sons* in *soie*, in the second, soundyng *s*, lyke a *z*, as *zons*, *zoie*.

Example for the fyrst conjugation as in this verbe *aymons*, whiche is the fyrst person plurell nombre of *jai*, chaungyng this syllable *ons* in *oie*, ye have *aimoie*; of *auons*, ye have *auoie*; of *donnons*, *donnoie*.

Example for the seconde conjugation, as in these worde: *baisons*, turnyng the last syllable, whiche is *sons* in *soie*, ye have of *brisons*, *brisoie*; of *faisons*, *faisoie*; of *disons*, *disoie*; and the seconde persone shall termyne in *ois*, the thirde in *oit*; the fyrst plurell nombre in *ions* for the fyrst, and *sons* for the seconde, as it shall appere clerely in the conjugations herafter folowing, and this rule is infallyble for all preterites imparfyte.

OF THE PRETERIT PARFYTE.

The preterit parfyte, as well of the fyrst as of the seconde conjugation hath dyvers termynations, but there is four speciall, that is to say in *us*, in *is*, in *ins* and in *ay*.

Example of *us*: as *je bus*, *je fus*, *je leus*, *je congneus*, etc.
of *is*: as *je escripuis*, *je deis*, *je mis*, *je feis*.
of *ins*: as *je tins*, *je prins*, *je uins*, *japrins*.
of *ay*: as *jaimay*, *je donnay*, *je baisay*, *je prisay*, *je laissay*.

Page 933

And so the verbe that ende in *us* shalbe, *je bus*, *tu bus*, *il but*, *nous bumés*, *vous butés*, *ilz burent*.

Example of *is*: as *je feis*, *tu feis*, *il feist*, *nous fismés*, *vous feistés*, *ilz firent*.
of *ins*: as *je uins*, *tu uins*, *il uint*, *nous uimmés*, *uous uintés*, *ilz uindrent*.
of *ay*: as *je donnay*, *tu donnas*, *il donna*, *nous donnasmés*, *vous donnastés*, *ilz donnerent*.

THE PRETERIT INDIFFYNITYVE.

Ye shall ever fourme the preterit indiffynityve with the thre persons, both singuler and plurell nombres of this verbe (have) in the present tensis, saying, *jay aymé*, I have loved; *tu as aymé*, thou hast loved; *il a aymé*, *nous auons*, *uous aues*, *ilz ont aymé*; and likewise of all other verbes with the sayd have, as *jay dit*, *jay bu*, *jay lu*, *jay fait*.

OF THE FORMATION OF THE PRETER PLUS PARFYTE.

The preterit most perfect is ever formed with the preterit imperfite of the foresayd verbe (have) as the indiffynityve is with the presente, sayeng I have done, thou haddest done, that is to say, *jauoie dit*, *jauoie aymé*, *jauoie bus*, *jauoie requis*; and so thorowe the thre persons, never chaungyng the terminacion of the verbe, as *jauoie dit*, *tu auois dit*, *il auoit dit*, *nous auions dit*, *uous auies dit*, *ilz auoient dit*; and so of all other lyke.

THE FUTUR OF THE INDICATYVE.

Ye shall understande that all maner verbes in generall ben termyned in their thre persons synguler and plurell nombres after this wayes: *ray*, *ras*, *ra*: *rons*, *res*, *ront*, so that ye shall take the verbe in the present, and put the *s* away at the later ende, if it be of the seconde or the fyrst conjugacion, and adde therto the foresayd terminacyon: as in this worde *dis*, I saye; ye shall take awaye *s* and adde *ray*, sayeng *diray*, *diras*, *dira*, *dirons*, *dirés*, *diront*. *Jaimeray*, *tu aymeras*, *il aymera*, *nous aymerons*, *uous aymerés*, *ilz aymeront*. There be some verbes must have more addicion, as *dors*, I slepe, whiche must have *mi*, added unto it, sayeng, *dormiray*, and *boy*, *drinke*, which sygnify I drinke; ye shal nat say *boiray*, but *buueray*, I shall drinke; and so of some other, as *doy*, ought; and *metre*, I put. How be it they be all termined with the above sayd termination.

Page 934

OF THE IMPERATIVE, WHICHE SIGNIFYETH COMMAUNDYNG.

The imperative for the most parte is ever lyke the verbe present tensis of the indicatyve moode, leavyng the fyrst persone and puttyng the pronowne after the verbe, for it differs nat: save in the thyrde persone synguler, and plurell nombre of some verbes, as *jay*, whiche doth make in the thirde person synguler, *il a*; and the thirde persone of the imperatyve is *quil ayt*, or *ayt cil*, ou *celuy*; and lykewyse of *scay*. But of the moste parte of others, it is lyke the present, leavyng the fyrst persone, whiche is nat in the imperatyve synguler nombre, as in this verbe *jai*, *tu aime*, *il aime*, *nous aimons*, *uous aimez*, *ilz aiment*; which his present is that is a lyke in the imperatyve, leavyng the fyrst persone, sayeng *aime tu*, *aime cil*, *aimons nous*, *aimés vous*, *quilz aiment*; puttyng ever the pronowne after the verbe.

The sayde imperatyve hath two futures, the tone affyrmatyve, and the tother negatyve, whiche have evermore these frenche wordes going before every person:

do, kepe, se, Se that thou speke; loke that he move nat;
faitz, garde, voy, as in this example: Voy que tu parle; garde quil ne se meuue;

prenons garde que nous ne mouuons, que vous ne mouues; prenez garde quilz ne se meuuent; and lykewise of the affyrmative, leavyng this worde *ne*.

THE OPTATYVE.

After the olde grammer was wonte to be all one with his preterit imperf. but we shall make hym different from hym, puttyng before the verbe this worde *oh*, or *je vous prie*, sayeng, *oh que je boiue, je te prie que tu boiue*, etc.

The sayd optatyve hath thre preterites, that is to say, imperf., parfyte, and plusperf., puttynge alwayes a *ma uoullente*, or *plust a Dieu* before the verbe. The preterit imperf. is moost termyned in *usse, inse*, and in *asse*, whiche may serve lykewise for the present, as in these verbes: *Pleust à Dieu que jaimasse; a ma uoullente que tu me congneusse; pleust a Dieu que tu prinsses courage*. The parfyte is moche lyke the preterit indiffynityve of the indicatyve, as a *ma uoullente que jaie aimé*. The plus perfyt hath ever this verbe *jeusse* (I had) before hym, as *jeusse aimé, jeusse dit*, etc. His presente doth serve for his future, addyng either *tantost* or *demain*, sayeng *pleust a Dieu que je uoise demain avec uous; a ma uoullente que deuiegne bon, a ma uoullente quil soit tantost corrige*.

Page 935

THE SUBJUNCTIVE OR CONJUNCTIVE.

The conjunctive is lyke the optative in his present and preterittes, save that we say in stede of *pleust a Dieu, a ma uoullente; sy, come, quant*, or *ueu*, sayeng for the present, *sy je fuisse maintenant, comme jay congneu, quant jeusse sentu*.

The sayd conjunctyve hath two futures, the tone hath alwayes this worde *mais*, goyng before the verbe, as *mais que je soie joieulz*, etc.

The tother is borrowed of the potenciall mode, and hath for his termynation, *roy, rois, roit: rions, ries, roient*, as *jaimeroie, tu aimerois, il aimeroit, nous aimerions, uous aimeriez, ilz aimeroient*; and likewise of all others. The termination of the infinityve shall appere in the verbes here after folowyng, wherfore in eschewyng prolixite, I will no further speke of it. The preterit must ever have this verbe infynityve moode: *auoir*, before hym, as *auoir parlé, auoir dit, auoir mordz*, etc.

The gerundyve is formed of the infinityve, and of the participle present tensis, as *de parler, pour conferer, en communicant*, etc. The overthrowen or supins which ben called *reuerses*, ye shall ever put the preterit parfit or the second futur of the conjunctive before him, sayeng: *je te uoulsisse, or je te uouldroye bien aimé de Dieu*, etc.

A RULE FOR TO MAKE PARTICIPLES, ADVERBES AND NOWNES OF THE VERBES FOLOWYNGE.

All maner verbes infinitive mode endyng in *er*, takyng the *r* away, ye have the preterit masculin, and addyng an *e* to the *é* that remaine, ye have the participle feminin of the preterit tensis, as in this verbe *enseigner*, take away the *r*, ye have *enseigné*, which is masculin, and addyng another *e* to it, ye have *enseignée*, which is the preterit feminin, soundyng the first *e* as a uowel, and if ye adde *ment* to it, ye shal have *enseignement*, which is an adverbe, and puttyng both *es* away, and addyng *ant*, ye have the participle present, whiche is *enseignant*, and this rule is generall for the termination. Also all verbes endyng in *ir*, as *uenir*, and such as come of him must al change *ir* in *u* for the preterit masculyn, and addyng an *e* to the sayd *u* for the feminin. Exemple for the masculin, if ye take *ir* away from *uenir, tenir, souuenir, soubstenir, maintenir*, and adde *u* for it, ye shall have, *uenu, tenu, souuenu, maintenu*, and addyng an *e* to it, ye shall have the feminin, whiche

Page 936

be, *uenue, tenue, souuenu, maintenue*, etc. and if ye put away the sayd *u* and *e*, and put *ant* for it, ye shall have the participle present tensis, as *uenant, tenant, souuenant, maintenant*. There ben other verbes ending in *ir*, whiche must chaunge the *r* in *e* for the feminin, and without the *e* for the masculin, as *benir*, take away the *r*, ye have *beny*, which is preterit masculin, and adde an *e* to it, ye have *benie*, whiche is the feminin, and lykewise of *bannir, banni, bannie; rauy, rauie*, and adding *ssant* to the masculin, ye have *banissant, benissant, rauissant*. *Mourir* and *querir* must be excepted: for *mourir* hath *mort* for his masculyn, and *morte* for the femynyn, and *querir, quis* and *quise; mourant* and *querant* for the participle present tense.

Also those wherof the infynityve termyne or ende in *tre*, or in *dre*, the *e* beyng a consonant, as *batre, abatre, combatre, rabatre, debatre: pendre, fendre, deffendre, tendre, rendre, uendre*, must all chaunge *re* in *u* for the masculyn, sayeng *batu, abatu, combatu, pendu, fendu, deffendu, uendu, tondu*, addyng an *e* to it for the femynyn, sayeng *batue, uendue, fendue, tondue*; ye must except *prendre* with all his dirivatives, and make *pris, prise; repris, reprise; compris, comprise; mespris, mesprise*. There ben other that ende in *e*, as *mectre*, with all that of hym ben diryvate; whiche must folowe the sayd rule, as *permis, permise; mis, mise; demis, demise; commis, commise; promis, promise; remis, remise; compris*, etc. and bycause they be noted for the most parte among the Catalogue of verbes, and howe ye shall fourme lykewise both nownes and adverbis: and also that it is harde for to fynde a rule generall and infallyble, I do here termyne

the sayde rules.

HERE AFTER FOLOWETH SOME VERBES AFTER THE LETTERS OF THE *A, B, C.*

A.	to water abruuer	to dresse or to order addouber
to cast downe abattre	to make a fole or beest abestir	to warne aduertir
to barke abaier	to abuse abuser	to touche adeser
to stoupe abaissier	to leane the backe adosser	to auowe aduouer
to araye abiller	to distroy abolir	to wyne or to adde adjouter
to bourde aborder	to make swete adoulcir	to swere adjurer

Page 937

to go out of the way adirer	to make fast affycher	to make leane amesgrir
to clyppe accoller	to make feble affoyblir	to make smale amenuser
to pacifye accoyser	to make fre affranchir	to heape amonceler
to tryme a woman achesmer	to dresse agencer	to drye adurer
to agre accorder	to tache with a hoke aggrapper	to arnat or prepare aourner
to aquent accoynter	to make more greuous aggrauer	to gyve sucke allaiter
to gader accumuler	to tache aggripper	to kyndel alumer
to bow downe, croked accroper	to knele agenouller	to alter alterer
to accepte accepter	to flatter alechier	to waste anuller
to bye acheter	to cherysshe aloser	to anounce anoncer
to harken accoupter	to gader amasser	to appere apparoistre
to certyfy acertener	to wrappe amallotter	to pacify apaiser
to cache with a hoke acrocher	to tye amarer	to aparel appareiller
to directe adrecer	to wake ambuler	to call appeller
to mynister administrer	to leade amener	to perceyve apercepuoir
to ordre at pleasure affaitter	to mende amender	to make redy aprester
to make one lame affoller	to love aimer	to learne aprendre

to make sharpe
affiler

to put on a mantel
affubler

Page 938

to waxe poore
apourir

to tame
apriuoiser

to appoint
apointer

to leane upon
appuier

to go before
anticiper

to make propre
aproprier

to assemble
assembler

to assigne
assigner

to assure
asseurer

to kyl with a clubbe
assommer

to fulfyl
assouuir

to make one bownde
asseruir

to assople
assouldre

to make sadde
assoupir

to invade
assailir

to consent
assentir

to flatter
assotir

to make to swere
assermenter

to make subget
assubgetter

Page 939

to bable lyke a duck
barbottér

to plee the fole
baguenauder

to make lesse
amaindrir

to make softe
amollir

to resemble
assimuller

to fall in company
associer

to helpe
assister

to reste a man
arester

to enquere one
araisonner

to come or to lande
arriuer

to ronde or go about
arondir

to water or sparcle water
arrouser

to fal in the company
arouter

to tye
atacher

to tary or abyde
attendre

to dresse
atourner

to catche subtelly
attraper

to hitte or ouertake
attaindre

to reche
auaindre

to take hede
auiser

to go about
auironner

to auance
auancer

to have
auoir

to juste
behourdér

to bargayne
barguignér

to flatre with myrth
aploudir

to aproche
aprocher

to gyve auctorite
auctoriser

to somen
adjourner

to dawne
ajourner

to jeopard
aduenturer

to swallow or go downe
aualler

B

to bete
battre

to buylde
baatir

to cast butter upon rost
bastir

to banysshe
bannir

to bast the roste
bassér

to stoupe
baissér

to kysse
baisér

to mocke
bauér

to barre a dore
barrér

to barter
baretér

to gape
beer

to gape
ll. basllier

to blote
ll. barbouller

to bribe
briber

to hurte
blesser

to beate at ars bacculer	to blame blasmer	to sethe or boyle boullonner
to shake a sworde brandir	to swere blasphemér	to delve bescher
to brew brassér	to yexe ll. balliér	to tourne away bestourner
to bragge braguér	to bable ll. babillér	to dounse balloyer
to stutte begguér	to swepe baliér	to cut bussches buissoner
to ete lyke a gote broutér	to stut balbutér	to burne brusler
to brawle or to wage bransler	to lyspe besguér	to stutte brettonner
to rocke the cradel berchér	to shave barbiér	to brunishe brunir

to hunt beres bersér	to blasonne blassonnér	C
to blysse benir	to drinke boire	to play at cardes carder
to begge belistrér	to eate gredely briffér	to trifle cabasser
to bourde or jape bourdér	to springe bourjonér	to hide cacer
to bathe baignér	to budde bouttonnér	to breke casser
to put bouttér	to set a broche brochér	to hunte chasser
to crye or wepe braire	to bridel brider	to spit cracer
to breke briser	to worke besongnér	to chope brede chapler
to speke fayre blandir	to blotte broullér	to clatter caqueter

Page 940

to rele chanceler	to tame cicurer	to compasse compasser
to shake canceler	to take right away ciffrer	to nayle clouér
to tickel catouller	to cleyme clamer	to contryve controuuér
to danse caroler	to shit clore	to whelpe chiennér
to cloute showes carler	to halte clocer	to tourne to a purpose conuertir
to charme charmer	to cover couurir	to reken comptér
to hewe charpenter	to guyde conduire	to comprehende comprendre

to carie charier	to knowe congnouistre	to strive contendre
to put on hoses chausser	to runne courrir	to make composér
to caffe or warme chauffer	to counsell consellér	to compile compilér
to charge charger	to ronne togider concourrir	to discerne concernér
to do reverence chaproner	to correcte corriger	to kepe conseruér
to over charge craunter	to speke togider conferér	to comaunde comandér
to cherisshe cherir	to situat colloqué	to fortyfe corroborér
to shyfte cheuir	to stoupe coytir	to constrayne contraindre
to geder ceullier	to constrayne cohercér	to graunt consentir
to certify certifier	to reduce narrowly coartér	to suffre comportér
to walke cheminer	to confounde confoundre	to forgyve condonnér
to somme citer	to go about costoiér	to conceyve concepuoir

Page 941

as liker throw a cloth coulér	to bake cuire	to spende despendre
to corruppe or corrupt corompre	to smarte cuyre	to unhang despendre
to shrive confessér	D	to dye deuiér
to deffende cohibér	to dampne damnér	to purpose deliberér
to conforte confortér	to danse dansér	to unbynde desliér
to ayde consoler	to date dattér	to devore deuorér
to be ydel connuér	to cast a dart darder	to take away destituér
to be suerte caucionér	to aske demander	to distrempe destrempér
to sowe coudre	to pay the costes deffroiér	to disloge deslogér
to resyste contrestér	to disconfit desconfire	to deuine deuinér
to lye couchér	to defende deffendre	to bacbite detractér
to beshitte conchiér	to unnayle desclouér	to deceyve decepuoir

to winke cligné	to owe debuier	to gyve sentence determiner
to drede craindre	to debate debatre	to discusse desrainer
to feare crennir	to overcome debellér	to distroy desmollir
to burste creuér	to juge decidér	to distourbe destourber
to farte or to burste crepité	to begile defraudér	to untrusse destroussér
to afferme creancér	to go out of the way desuoiér	to deliver deliurer
to crye criér	to denye denier	to unneste deuisér

Page 942

to prejudice deroguer	to put downe desmectre	to unbende a crosbowe descocher
to put of rementes ll. despoullér	to denye sayeng desdire	to clatter out descliquer
to disprayse desprisér	to put out deboutér	to unhose deschaussér
to devise deuisér	to uncover descouurir	to spoyle despouller
to come downe descendre	to take away lande desterrér	to unbende desbendér
to unfolde desuelopér	to disenherite desheritér	to unlace deslachér
to deprave deprauér	to breke faste desuner	to make myrth as byrdes degoiger
to put downe deprimér	to distroy destruire	to deserve deseruir
to make fowle deturpér	to dishonoure deshonorér	to delate delater
to unknowe descognoistre	to defyle deflorér	to distroy dissiper
to forsake delaissér	to go from merite desmerité	to dispute discepter
to devoure deglubér	to unpurvey despourueoir	to dispence dispenser
to sease desistér	to rele desuidér	to say dire
to robbe desrobér	to discourage descoragér	to have lordshippe dominer
to go out of order desreglér	to put out of the place desloquer	to gyve donner
to temper destrempér	to distroy the people depopulér	to slepe dormir
to unbridel desbridér	to take awaye maydenhed despuclér	to tame domptér

to discharge
deschargér

to spoyle
despredér

to display
desplér

to discorde
descordér

to set forth and go back
desmarchér

to unarme
desarmér

Page 943

E

to sparcle about
esparpillér

to lyght
esclérér

to sporte
esbatre

to enforce
enforcér

to scape
eschappér

to bashe
esbahir

to hunt away
enchassér

to skyrmysshe
escarmuchér

to be bawle
esbaudir

to lyghten
esclarcir

to quarter
escartelér

to blusshe
esblouir

to hyde away
esconsér

to mocke
escharmír

to here or harken
escoutér

to eschewe
escheoir

to make afrayde
espouentér

to set upon the spit
embrochér

to shake of
excuté

to be marveyled
esmerueillér

to teche
endoctrinér

to bringe to passe
executé

to gete corage
esuertuér

to kepe skowte wache
eschauguetér

to be delivered of a childe
enfantér

to prove
esprouuér

to scarche
esgratignér

to breke
enfraindre

to spurre
esperonnér

to make softe
emollir

to sinke
enfondrér

to understande
entendre

to wexe harde
endurcir

to sinke
enfonsér

to cancre
ll. enrouillér

to wrappe
enfardeler

to set togider narrowly
enferrer

to waxe madde
enragér

to folde up
enueloper

to go out of the way
escartér

to waxe riche
enrichir

to put in the ovyne
enfournér

to put or blot out
effacer

to breake
entamer

to esteme
esmér

to go out of the way
egarér

to put in prison
emprisonnér

to cromme
esmiér

to waxe great
engrossir

to grynde
esmouldre

to spare
espagnér

to move
esmouuoír

to stoupe
estoupér

to sparcle
espardre

to clyppe
enbracér

to sette at large
eslargir

Page 944

to sette up
erigér

to hope
esperér

to strive
estriuér

to exalte
exaltér

to enmayle
esmaillér

to sparcle
estincilér

to styre one

to stere out the brain

to inforce

exagitér	esceruelér	enforcér
to put out of order exorbitér	to clene the nose esmouchér	to take corage encouragér
to be buse exercitér	to waxe a slepe endormir	to encrease encroistre
to take without ryght extorqué	to wake esueillér	to set a stringe upon a bowe encorder
to distroy exterminér	to invade empaindre	to write escripre
to excuse excusér	to press on espraindre	to curse escomunier
to shake of escussér	to kyndle esprendre	to undertake enprendre
to say nay escondire	to teche enseigné	to undertake entreprendre
to declare explicqué	to launch a bote esquipér	to stretche estendre
to declare epiloqué	to shake escouer	to tye with a chayne enchainér
to go about enuironné	to set a thyng in the wynde esuentér	to close enclore
to serche nygh expliqué	to drye uppe essuer	to mete encontrér
to poyson empoysonné	to be abasshed estonné	to borowe empruntér
to wrappe entortillér	to put liker in a vessel entonné	to bury ensepuelir
to flee escorchér	to put in the case estuyér	to move esmouoir
to spye espiér	to quenche estaindre	to waxe riche enrichir
to pluc away esraciér	to stablisse establi	to put in the grounde enterrér

Page 945

to stanche estancer	to pluck up parforce enrachér	to penetre faussér
to lede away enmener	to kyndle embrasér	to make false falsifiér
to eschew euitér	to waxe fayre embellir	to fayle faillir
to set upon a hepe entassér	to spotte with myre embouér	to do faire
to cut entaillér	to beshytte embrenér	to paint as women do farder
to folow ensuiuir	to scalde eschaudér	to wrappe fardeler
to dye espirér	to chaffe eschauffér	to play or mocke farcér
to kyndle	to pluc from the shelle	to stuffe mete

esprendre	eschallér	farsir
to lette empeschér	to make worse empirér	to feyne faindre
to embrace embrachér	to set in presse empressér	to facion a thyng fassonnér
to make thicke espessir	to except exceptér	to helpe faourisér
to ladle espuisér	to banishe exillér	to make one wery facér
to bere away emportér	to breke a dere euiscerér	to fawne faonnér
to exorte enortér	F	to swadel fachér
to nese estrenuér	to talke fabulér	to make fertil fecondér
to sende enuoiér	to forge fabricquér	to cleve fendre
to scratche esgratignér	to go about nought fatroullér	to strike ferir
to geve the first hansel estrinér	to fantasy fantasiér	to make hay fenér
to stoppe estanchér	to mow faulchér	to make feste festoiér

Page 946

to put the levain fermenter	to lay out fonser	to bow fleschir
to show horses ferrér	to shitte out forclore	to florisshe flourir
to shytt fermér	to furbisshe fourbir	to haunte frequenter
to forme or shape figurér	to banisshe forbanir	to quake fremir
to spinne filér	to forfect forfaire	to frye fricquassér
to kasten a thyng on the grounde fichér	to draw from another fortraire	to frye frire
to congele foitir	to forswere forjurer	to play the galant fringner
to melte fondre	to scourge fouetter	to shake of the ague frissonnér
to forge forger	to fly fourir	to bruse froier
to hurte or to dresse cloth fouller	to fetche vitall fourrager	to rubbe frotér
to serche ll. fouller	to go from the lyne forligner	to breake froissér
to furre fourrer	to enforce forcer	to ronne away fourir
	to shape	to assyst

to provaile fourboullir	former	fulcir
to go out of the way fouruier	to use idel wordes flagorner	to thretten fulminér
to waxe madde forsener	to flatter flatter	to fume fumér
to be killed with tempest fouldroier	to smell flairer	to disceyve frustrér
to play the fole folloier	to tormente flageller	G
to confort a membre with a bathe fomenter	to pipe flajoller	to mocke gabér
to donge fienter	to wade flaistrir	to lay a wayes gagér

Page 947

to gage a vessell gaugér	to tourne gerér	to sclyde ll. griller
to distroy any thyng garconnér	to discryve the world or therth geographer	to sclyde glisser
to kepe gardér	to springe germiner	to scratche griffer
to garnysse garnir	to eate as a glotton gourmander	to grynne gn. grigner
to graunt garantir	to say meate gouster	to gryppe or to clyme gripper
to galope a horse galloper	to droppe goutter	to grudge gn. grongner
to lette blode garsér	to governe gouuerner	to curle as a cattle gruler
to clatter garrulér	to parbreke gosiller	to heale guerir
to waste gaistér	to barke as a fulmer glatir	to rewarde guerdonner
to rejoise gaudir	to gleane glenner	to forsake guerpir
to make mery, or to prike gallér	to glorifye glorifier	to caste geler
to wynne gaigner	to glose gloser	to make warre guerroier
to lye downe gesir	to folde togyder glomerer	to complayne guermenter
to dresse gencér	to glew glutiner	to voyde guenchir
to frese gellér	to clawe grater	to lyfte up guinder
to turmente gehinér	to grave or sculpe grauer	to gyde guyder
to confesse gehir	to noy greuer	to watche guetter

to playne
gemir

to double
geminér

Page 948

H

to leave alone
habandonner

to have plentie
habonder

to cutte small
hacher

to haunte
hanter

to be sonne burnde
hasler

to plucke up
ll. haller

to rele threde
hapler

to catche
happer

to harpe
herper

to hate
hair

to pyke a quarell
harceler

to pyke a quarell
harier

to ryse up
haulser

to play at dyce
hasarder

to harborowe
hebreger

to lodge
hosteler

to harowe
hercher

to ney as a horse
hennir

Page 949

to invade
inuader

to intoxicat
infectioner

to grese botes
gresser

to hayle
gresler

to succede to heritage
heriter

to move
hobber

to be wery
hoder

to spotte
honnir

to make one ashame
hontoier

to grudge
gn. hongner

to put on botes
houser

to wynde up
housser

to calle
hucher

to suppe
humer

to humme
huner

to stryke with horns
hurter

to be meke
humilier

to hurtel togider
hurteler

to make a creste lyke a coke
fighting
hurer

to houle as a dogge
huler

to set up the heres as a hedge
dog
herissonner

I

to boost
jacter

to loke with one eye
guigner

to chatter as byrdes
jargonner

to folowe
imiter

to trouble
infester

to say unto
inferer

to injury
injurier

to put upon
inculquer

to call
inciter

to bringe in
introduire

to stablysh a bisshop
introniser

to put in parforce
intruser

to enquere
interroguer

to teache
instruire

to attempte
inuestiguer

to finde
inuenter

to make unhappe
infortuner

to move
instiguer

to reprove
improperer

to wrappe
intriguer

to sacrify
immoler

to stele
larciner

to sile a wale
lambroisser

to be importunat importuner	to swere jurer	to complayne lamenter
to require implorer	to justify justifier	to drinke as a dogge lapper
to call inuocquer	to do justice justicier	to wepe larmoier
to gete impetrer	to angre irriter	to wepe lacrimer
to put on imputer	to winter iuerner	to stone to deth lapider
to jeopart ingerer	to go out issir	to larde larder
to inspire inspirer	to cut the trouth juguler	to lathe with lathes latter
involver	to ronne upon one irruer	to wache lauer
to printe imprimer	to use dronkenschap iurongner	to lyke lescher
to cal to inviter	L	to lyfte leuer
to ordenne instituer	to labour labourer	to lure, as a hawke leurer
to let interpeller	to lace lacer	to tye lier
to induce induire	to lose or let go lascer	to fyle as a smyte limer
to teche or bringe in introduire	to provoke laccesser	to deliver liurer
to juste jouster	to leave laisser	to rede lire
to play jouer	to wery lasser	to here louer
to joine joindre	to lance lancer	to lawde loer

Page 950

to shine luire	to marke marquer	to asswage metiguer
to wrestell luiteur	to hamer marteler	to shewe monstrer
M	to putte mectre	to mortifie mortifier
to chewe macher	to begge mendier	to grounde mouldre
to mary marier	to muse mediter	to move mouuoir
to angre marir	to eate menger	to make a molde mouller
to blaspheme maulgrier	to thanke mercier	to wite ll. mouller

to barguine marchander	to backebyte mesdire	to mue as a hawke muer
to martir martirer	to medyll mesler	to hide mucer
to martir martiriser	to reken falce mescompter	to fortify munir
to mastry maistrer	to do a mysse mesprendre	to multiply multiplier
to waxe leane maigrir	to disprease mespriser	to go to hervest moissonner
to worke as a mason massonner	to murdre meurdrir	all one messonner
to mainteyn maintenir	to lye mentir	to playe the husbande mesnager
to curse mauldire	to deserve meriter	to byte mordre
to handle manier	to mysknowe mescognoistre	to dye mourir
to make foule maculer	to loke in a glasse mirer	to mounte monter
to make blacke machurer	to dyg in the grounde miner	to swepe the nose moucer
to trede marcher	to lede mener	to morfounde morfoundre

Page 951

to mocke mocquer	to swimme noer	bloted forgotten obliterer
to put one yvell maumectre	to drowne noier	to forgette oublier
to mysdo mesfaire	to nombre nombrer	to withstande obuier
all one mesprendre	to notte notter	to darken obfusquer
N	to nourishe norir	to offende offencer
to swym nager	to shade noncer	to offrende offrir
to shewe narrer	to make black noircer	to kyll occire
to serve at tennes nacqueter	to certify notiffier	to hide occulter
to give posession nantir	to name nommer	to make fole ordoier
to wounde naurer	to hurt nuyre	to ordayne ordonner
to be borne naistre	to strive noisir	to leve obmectre
to make mattes nater	O	to hurte oultrager

to set sinewes on a saddle
neruer

to make clene
nettoier

to denye
nier

to bride
nidger

to snuf with the nose
niffler

to becke with hedde
niquer

to knytte
nouer

Page 952

to dare
oser

to pray
orer

to enoysel as a hauke
oisiler

to warye
ourdir

to worke
ouurer

to open
ouurir

to take away
oster

to here
ouir

to graunte
ottroier

P

to forgyve
pardonner

to prepare
parer

to speke
parler

to painte
pandre

to forswere
parjurer

to parforme
parformer

to make an ende
parfaire

to obaye
obair

to be ocupyed
occuper

to darken
obscurer

to say yvell
obtrecter

to obtaine
obtenir

to bynde
obliger

to binde is all one
obliger

to perce
percer

to perceyve
percepuoir

to suffre
permectre

to waye
peser

to thynke
penser

to do
perpetrer

to perysshe
pericliter

to synne
pecher

to fysshe
pescher

to preache
prescher

to penetre or throwe
penetrer

to presente
presenter

to contynew
preseruer

to lose
perdre

to farte
petter

to knede
pestrir

to warantise
pleuir

to uttre
oultrer

to obtaine
obtenir

to graunte
obtemperer

to constrayne
opprimer

to opose
oposer

to wene
oppiner

to oppresse
oppresser

to walke
pourmener

to prove
prouer

to wepe
plourer

to dowke
plonger

to lye down as a hore
prostituer

to brynge forthe
produire

to shuldre
pousser

to powte
poussir

to bowe
ploier

to fole as a mare
poulener

to pygge as a sowe
pourceler

to sette
planter

to playde
plaider

to please
plaire

to plane
planer

to make even
planier

to lay a thyng downe or to
rest

to lese
perdre

to passe
passer

Page 953

to prycke
picquer

to stampe
piller

to robbe
ll. piller

to take away
priuer

to banysshe
prescripre

to presuppose
presuposer

to beare
perhiber

to defende
prohiber

to procure
procurer

to say before
predire

to prayse
priser

to make poudre
pulueriser

to multiply as birdes
pululler

to purchase
purchasser

to polisshe as silver
polire

to caste downe
precipiter

to publysshe
publier

to sounde
pasmer

to complayne
plaindre

Page 954

to lament
regretter

to restore
rendre

to bere
porter

to thynke
pourpenser

to lade out water
puiser

to suffre
permectre

Q

to double furre
quadrupler

to square
quarer

to square
quadrer

to stoupe
quatir

to douke
ou coitir

to sertche or demande
querir

to pyke a quarell
quereller

to begge as a pardonner
quester

to move a questyon
questionner

to begge
quemander

to quyte
quitter

to begge
quoquiner

to play the fole
quocarder

R

to bring lower
rabaisser

to bate of a somme
rabattre

to revoke
reuocquer

to restore in agayne
restablir

poser

to combe the hedde
gn. pigner

to pysse
pisser

to bring agayne
ramener

to gyve yll wordes
ramponer

to ravysse
rauir

to take away all
raser

to raunsome
ranconner

to overtake
rataindre

to rake with a rake
rateler

to rampe as a cat
ramper

to remembre agayne
ramenteuoir

to alowe it
ratifier

to refresshe
raffreschir

to recreate
recreér

to spyll
resprendre

to answeare
respondre

to rejoyce
resjourir

to refuse
refuser

to feare
resuer

to reduce
reduire

to refuce
recuser

to rewarde
remunerer

to reise agayn
resouldre

to rebounde rebunder	to restrayne restraindre	to bye agayne racheter
to reprove reprouuer	to robbe rober	S
to rest reposer	to cancre ll. rouiller	to salte saller
to grudge gn. recigner	to stare ll. rouller	to salute saluer
to eate at after noon reciner	to role rouller	to lepe saulter
to restore restituer	to snore ronfler	to ken scauoir
to reherce recencer	to gnawe ronger	to blede saigner
to resygne resigner	to ruffle rouffler	to yelke sangloutir
to go backe reculer	to take all away riffler	to save sauluer
to reforme refermer	to ryme rimer	to tast sauuorer
to shave rere	to rowe rymer	to heale saner
to reherce referer	to woe a woman rouuer	to halowe sainctifier
to releve releuer	to speke in ones ere runer	to sacrifice sacrifier
to bewray reueler	to use subtilte ruser	to wede yvel herbes sarcler
to reherce reciter	to repete by him self ruminer	to grave sculper
to repete repeter	to strike agayne reuerberer	to saciate saouler
to repugne repugner	to shine resplendir	to satisfie satisfaire

Page 955

to saw semer	to syghe souponer	to be sodenly afraide soursaillir
to somme semondre	to beare or staye soubstenir	to suffice suppeter
to serve seruir	to remembre souuenir	to withdrawe soubstraire
to preche sermonner	to come sodenly souruenir	to begyle suplanter
to sojourne sojourner	to swete suer	to calcule or nombre supputer
to deuide segreger	to set seoir	to be delygent songnier
to devyde separer	to sowke sucher	T

to gyve jugement sentencier	to folow suiuir	to blot or spote tacher
to signe signer	to succede succeder	to go about tacer
to sporte solager	to take sodenly surprendre	to tabure tabourer
to suffre souffrir	to ayde suffulter	to prike with heles tallonner
to suspecte soupeconner	to rone over suronder	to syfte tamisser
to sawe soier	to soupe soupper	to dye tandre
to wysshe souhaiter	to kare soucier	to dresse ledder tanner
to overcome sourmonter	to surname sournommer	to pike quarel tarier
to subdue soubmectre	to helpe up sustenter	to grope or taste taster
to dreame songer	to strayne serrer	to taxe taxer
to slombre sommeiller	to flater sugerer	to cut ll. tailler
to assoyle souldre	to over wene surcuider	to taxe tausser
Page 956		
to bende or go about tendre	to swepe torcher	to begyle tromper
to shere tondre	to bete torcer	to trusse trousser
to ley a tente tenter	to take away tollir	to cut in gobettes tronchonner
to tempte tenter	to medle ll. touller	to falle tumber
to abide temporiser	to coughe toussir	to kylle tuer
to make besynesse tempester	to wip teudre	to mocke trouffer
to tempre temprer	to traite traiter	to tormente tourmenter
to holde tenir	to go overthwarde trauerser	to just or fyght tournoier
to make one wery tenner	to forshape transmuer	to begge truander
to vade ternir	to trace, as a hare tracér	to go thorow trespercher
to ende terminer	to strike or blot out tracér	to expownde tropographer
to karve trancher	to sounde transir	to drawe or to milke a cowe traire

to chide tencer	to sende transmectre	to crye crier
to plat heres trescher	to transporte transporter	U
to draw tirer	to betray trahir	to varye uaciller
to styrre the fyre tiser	to tremble trembler	to vayncquysshe uaincre
to dresse a woman tiffer	to draw trainer	to be worthe ualloir
to clyppe heares touser	to find trouuer	to fanne corne uaner
to tourne tourner	to travayle ll. traouiller	to boste uanter

Page 957

to varye uarier	to lye on the bely uentrouller	to muse uiser
to be avenged uenger	to fil the cup uerser	to vysyte uiseter
to go aboute uacquer	to make wynde uenter	to live uiure
to selle uendre	to shyte the bolte uerrouller	to turne uirer
to comme uenir	to make grene uerdoier	to shame uituperer
to fysel uener	to shame uergonder	to pisse uriner
to uernysshe uernir	to fysell uessir	to put out uoyder
to boxe uentouser	all one uesner	to devoure uorrer
to verifye uerifier	to watche ll. uellier	to gather grapes uendenger
to make verses uersifier	to se ueoir	to make shadowe umbroier
to serche the uttermoste uentiler		

Here consequently foloweth the conjugations wherof the fyrst shalbe tourned in one tens, synguler nombre and plurell, sixe and thirty maner awaye, every person sixe maner wayes, that is to say, the affyrmatyve thre wayes and the negatyve lykewise; as whan I say: I have, which is affyrmatyve or grauntyng, if ye do turne it, ye shall have, have I. And if ye put this worde, why, before it, ye shall have a questyon, as: why have I, and lykewyse of the negation or denying, whiche is, I have nat; turne it, ye have, have nat I: and puttyng why before it, ye have a question, whiche is: why have nat I. And in lyke maner thorowe every persone synguler and plurell; and so shall it be sixe and thirty wayes in one tens, and this rule is generall for every verbe.

Also there is another maner, whiche shall serve for every verbe lykewyse, and shalbe turned in one tens an hundred and eyght wayes, with thre pronownes, that is to say: me, the, hym.

Example for the fyrst persone: I have me, I have the, I have hym. And

Page 958

we tourne it, we shall have: have I me, have I the, have I hym. Than puttyng why before it, we shall have: Why have I me, why have I the, why have I hym; and this is nyne wayes in the

affyrmatyve.



Nowe, if ye do lykewise in the negatyve, ye shall have other nyne wayes, as whan ye say: I have nat me, I have nat the, I have nat him, and tournyng it, ye have: have I nat me, have I nat the, have I nat hym; and puttyng why before, I have: why have nat I me, why have nat I the, why have nat I hym. And doynge lykewise of the seconde persone and the thyrde, and consequently with the plurell nombre, ye shall have syx tymes eightene variable and sondry wayes, which do amount to an hundred and viii wayes in one tense, and may be lykewise of every verbe; and if ye do take but the fyrste worde of every persone, ye shall have a syngle conjugacion, as: I have, thou hast, he hath: we have, ye have, they have, etc.

Page 959

Here after foloweth the fyrst conjugacion whiche is sixe and thyrty wayes in the presente, and lykewyse of every preteryte and future, in every tense and mode, except all the imperatyves the present of the optatyves. And bycause we can nat specifye by our wordes any of our dedes, signyfyng action, without this verbe (have) we shall begyn with the same, addyng to it a worde or two for to shewe an example, howe one may make dyverse and many sentences with one worde, and perconsequent come shortely to the french speche.

Page 960

THE INDICATYVE PRESENT.

	 I have jay	great desyre grant desir
	have I ay je	
why pourquoy	have I ay je	
	I have nat ---je nay pas	
	have nat I nay je pas	great desyre grand desir
why pourquoy	have nat I nay je pas	
	 thou hast tu as	good appetyte bon appetit
	hast thou as tu	
why pourquoy	hast thou as tu	
	thou hast nat ---tu nas pas	
	hast thou nat nas tu pas	good appetyte bon appetit
why pourquoy	hast thou nat nas tu pas	
	he hath il a	sorowe deul



hath he
a il

why
pourquoy

hath he
a il

he hath nat
il na pas

hath he nat
nas tu pas

sorowe
deul

why
pourquoy

hath he nat
nas tu pas

Page 961

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.



we have
nous auons

joye
joie

have we
auons nous

why
pourquoy

have we
auons nous

we have nat
nous nauons mie

have nat we
nauons nous mie

joye
joie

why
pourquoy

have nat we
nauons nous mie



ye have
uous auéz

right
droit

have we
auons nous

why
pourquoy

have we
auons nous

ye have nat
uous nauéz point

have ye nat
nauéz uous point

right
droit

why
pourquoy

have ye nat
nauéz uous point



they have
ilz ont

shame
honte

have they
ont ilz

why
pourquoy

have they
ont ilz

they have nat
ilz nont pas

have they nat
nont ilz pas


shame
honte

why
pourquoy

have they nat
nont ilz pas

Page 962

THE PRETERIT IMPARFYTE.

I dyd have, or I was
havyng, or I had
 jauoy

had I
auoy je
good hope
bonne esperance

why
pourquoy


had I
auoy je

I had nat
---je nauoy point

had nat I
nauoy je point
good hope
bonne esperance

why
pourquoy

had nat I
nauoy je point

 thou haddes
tu auois

haddest thou
auois tu
great feare
belle peur

why
pourquoy


haddest thou
auois tu

thou haddest nat
---tu nauois mie

haddest thou nat
nauois tu mie
great feare
belle peur

why
pourquoy

haddest thou nat
nauois tu mie

 he dyd have or had
il auoit

had he
auoit il
understandyng
entendement

why
pourquoy

had he
auoit il

he had nat
---il nauoit pas


had nat he
nauoit il pas
understandyng
entendement

why
pourquoy

had nat he
nauoit il pas


Page 963

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

 we had
nous auions

	had we auions nous	laiser loisir
why pourquoy	had we auions nous	
	we had nat --- nous nauions pas	

	had nat we nauions nous pas	laiser loisir
why pourquoy	had nat we nauions nous pas	

 they had
ilz auoient


	had they auoient ilz	well sayd bien dit
why pourquoy	had they auoient ilz	

--- they had nat
ilz nauoient pas

	had they nat nauoient ilz pas	well sayd bien dit
why pourquoy	had they nat nauoient ilz pas	

Page 964


THE PRETERIT PARFYTE.

 I had
je eus

	had I eus je	fayre pastyme beau passe temps
why pourquoy	had I eus je	

--- I had nat
je neus pas

	had nat I neus je pas	fayre pastyme beau passe temps
why pourquoy	had nat I neus je pas	

 thou haddest
tu eus


	haddest thou eus tu	moche a do a besongnier
why pourquoy	haddest thou eus tu	

--- thou haddest nat
tu neus point

	haddest nat thou neus tu point	moche a do a besongnier
--	-----------------------------------	----------------------------

why
pourquoy

haddest nat thou
neus tu point

 he had
il eust

had he
eust il

that that he sought
ce quil cerchoit

why
pourquoy

had he
eust il

he had nat
--- il neust pas

had nat he
neust il pas


that that he sought
ce quil cerchoit

why
pourquoy

had nat he
neust il pas

Page 965

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

 we had
nous eusmes

had we
eusmes nous

good corage
bon courage

why
pourquoy

had we
eusmes nous


we had nat
--- nous neusmes pas

had nat we
neusmes nous pas

good corage
bon courage

why
pourquoy

had nat we
neusmes nous pas

 ye had
uous eustes

had ye
eustes uous

the prise
le pris

why
pourquoy

had ye
eustes uous


ye had nat
--- uous neustes pas

had nat ye
neustes uous pas

the prise
le pris

why
pourquoy

had nat ye
neustes uous pas

 they had
ilz eurent

had they
eurent ilz

the aduauntage
laduauntage

why

had they

pourquoy

eurent ilz

they had nat
--- ilz neurent pas

had they nat
neurent ilz pas


the aduantage
laduantage

why
pourquoy

had they nat
neurent ilz pas

Page 966

THE PRETERIT INDIFFYNITYVE.

 I have had
jay eu

have I had
ay je eu

to drinke
a boire

why
pourquoy

have I had
ay je eu


I have nat had
--- je nay pas eu

have nat I had
nay je pas eu

to drinke
a boire

why
pourquoy

have nat I had
nay je pas eu

 thou hast had
tu as eu

hast thou had
as tu eu

thurst
soif

why
pourquoy

hast thou had
as tu eu


thou hast nat had
--- tu nas pas eu

hast thou nat had
nas tu pas eu

thurst
soif

why
pourquoy

hast thou nat had
nas tu pas eu

 he hath had
il a eu

hath he had
a il eu

to eate
a manger

why
pourquoy

hath he had
a il eu

he hath nat had
--- il na pas eu

hath he nat had
na il pas eu




to eate
a manger

why
pourquoy

hath he nat had
na il pas eu


Page 967

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

	 we have had nous auons eu	
	have we had auons nous eu	patience pacience
why pourquoy	have we had auons nous eu	
	we have nat had --- nous nauons pas eu	
	have we nat had nauons nous pas eu	pacyence pacience
why pourquoy	have we nat had nauons nous pas eu	
	 ye have had uous auez eu	
	have ye had auéz uous eu	nede necessite
why pourquoy	have ye had auéz uous eu	
	ye have nat had --- uous nauéz pas eu	
	have ye nat had nauéz uous pas eu	nede necessite
why pourquoy	have ye nat had nauéz uous pas eu	
	 they have had ilz ont eu	
	have they had ont ilz eu	their wages leur gages
why pourquoy	have they had ont ilz eu	
	they have nat had --- ilz nont pas eu	
	have they nat had nont ilz pas eu	their wages leur gages
why pourquoy	have they nat had nont ilz pas eu	

Page 968

THE PRETERIT MOST PARFYTE.


	 I had had jauoy eu	
	had I had auoy je eu	the payne la paine
why pourquoy	had I had auoy je eu	
	I had nat had	

--- je nauoy pas eu

had nat I had the payne
nauoy je pas eu la paine

why
pourquoy

had nat I had
nauoy je pas eu

 thou haddest had
tu auois eu

haddest thou had profyte
auois tu eu prouffit

why
pourquoy


haddest thou had
auois tu eu

thou haddest nat had
--- tu nauois pas eu

haddest thou nat had profyte
nauois tu pas eu prouffit

why
pourquoy

haddest thou nat had
nauois tu pas eu

 he had had
il auoit eu

had he had damage
auoit il eu damage

why
pourquoy

had he had
auoit il eu

he had nat had
--- il nauoit pas eu


had he nat had damage
nauoit il pas eu damage

why
pourquoy

had he nat had
nauoit il pas eu

Page 969

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

 we had had
nous auions eu

had we had wynnynng
auions nous eu gagnage

why
pourquoy


had we had
auions nous eu

we had nat had
--- nous nauions pas eu

had we nat had wynnynng
nauions nous pas eu gagnage

why
pourquoy

had we nat had
nauions nous pas eu

 ye had had
nous auions eu


had ye had losse
auions nous eu perte

why
pourquoy had ye had
 auions nous eu

ye had nat had
--- nous nauions pas eu

had ye nat had losse
nauions nous pas eu perte

why
pourquoy had ye nat had
 nauions nous pas eu

 they had had
ilz auoient eu

had they had their pleasure
auoient ilz eu pleur plaisir

why
pourquoy had they had
 auoient ilz eu


they had nat had
--- ilz nauoient pas eu

had they nat had their pleasure
nauoient ilz pas eu leur plaisir

why
pourquoy had they nat had
 nauoient ilz pas eu

Page 970

THE FUTURE.

 I shall have
je aray


shall I have better fortune
aray je meilleur fortune

why
pourquoy shall I have
 aray je

I shall nat have
--- je naray pas

shall nat I have better fortune
naray je pas meilleur fortune

why
pourquoy shall nat I have
 nanaray je pas

 thou shalte have
tu aras


shalte thou have moche a do
aras tu bien a faire

why
pourquoy shalte thou have
 aras tu

thou shalte nat have
--- tu naras pas

shalte thou nat have moche a do
naras tu pas bien a faire

why
pourquoy shalte thou nat have
naras tu pas

 he shall have
il ara

shall he have
ara il a strawe
ung festu

why
pourquoy shall he have
ara il


he shall nat have
--- il nara pas

shall he nat have
nara il pas a strawe
ung festu

why
pourquoy shall he nat have
nara il pas

Page 971

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

 we shall have
nous arons


shall we have
arons nous that that we wene
ce que nous cuidons

why
pourquoy shall we have
arons nous

we shall nat have
--- nous narons pas

shall we nat have
narons nous pas that that we wene
ce que nous cuidons

why
pourquoy shall we nat have
narons nous pas

 ye shall have
uous aréz


shall ye have
aréz uous your purpose
uostre purpose

why
pourquoy shall ye have
aréz uous

ye shall nat have
--- uous naréz point

shall ye nat have
naréz uous point uostre purpose
ce que nous cuidons

why
pourquoy shall ye nat have
naréz uous point

 they shall have
ilz aront

shall they have
aront ilz the goyng for the
comming
laler pour le uenir

why	shall they have	
pourquoy	aront ilz	
	they shall nat have	
	--- ilz naront pas	
	shall they nat have	
	naront ilz pas	the goyng for the
		comming
why	shall they nat have	laler pour le uenir
pourquoy	naront ilz pas	

Page 972

THE IMPARATYVE WHICHE IS SYNGLE.

Have thou selfe,	have the selfe,	have he
Ay tu mesme,	ay toi mesme,	ayt il,
Have him,	have she.--have we,	have ye.
Ayt celuy,	ayt celle.--aions nous,	aiéz uous.
Have they.		
Aient ceulz, ou celles.		

THE FUTURE.

Loke that thou have, that he have, that we have, that ye have, that they have.
 Garde que tu aye, quil ait, que nous aions, que uous aiéz, quilz aient.

THE SECONDE FUTURE NEGATYVE.

Do that thou have nat, do that he have nat, do that we have nat, that ye have nat,
 Fais que tu naye point, quil nait pas, que nous naions mie, que uous naiéz pas,
 that they have nat.
 quilz naient pas.

The optatyve whiche is syngle lykewyse, the which shall serve for a future, with an addicion of the tyme to come, as *tantost* or *demain*, etc.

I praye you	that I have,	that thou have,	that he have,
Je uous prie	que jaye,	que tu aie,	quil ayt,
With my wyll	that we have,	that ye have,	that they have.
A ma uoullenté	que nous ayons,	que uous aiéz,	quilz aient.

The preterit imparfyte, whiche may serve lykewyse for the present, after the olde grammer.

Wolde God	that I had,	that thou hadest,	that he had.
Pleust a Dieu	que je eusse,	que tu eusse,	quil eust.
Wolde God	that we had,	that ye had,	that they had.
Pleust a Dieu	que nous eussions,	que uous eussiez,	quilz eussent.

THE PRETERIT PARFYTE.

Wolde to God	that I have had,	that thou,	that he.
A ma uoullenté	que jaye eu,	que tu aie eu,	quil ait eu.
Wolde to God	that we have had,	that ye have had,	that they have had.
A ma uoullenté	que nous aions eu,	que uous aiez eu,	quilz aient eu.

Page 973

THE PRETERIT MOST PARFYTE.

0 if I had had,	thou hadest had,	he had had.
0 sy jeusse eu,	tu eusse eu,	il eust eu.
0 if we had had,	ye had had,	they had had.
0 sy nous eussions eu,	uous eussiez eu,	ilz eussent eu.

The subjunctyve is lyke the optatyve save the future sayeng, *comme* or *quant*.

	I have	
	jaye	
Comme	thou have	of custome
	tu aye	de coustome
	he have	

il ayt

we have, ye have they have.
Comme nous aions, uous aiéz, ilz ayent.

THE PRETERITE IMPARFYTE.

As I had or dyd have, as thou haddest, as he had, as
Comme j'eusse ou jauois, comme tu eusses ou auois, comme il eust ou auoit, comme

we had or dyd have, as ye had, as they had.
nous eussions ou auions, comme uous eusséz ou auyés, comme ilz eussent ou auoient.

THE PRETERITE PARFYTE.

As I have had, as thou hast had, as he hath had, as we have had,
Comme j'aye eu, comme tu aye eu, comme il ayt eu, comme nous ayons eu,

as ye have had, as they have had.
comme uous ayéz eu, comme ilz ayént eu.

THE PRETERITE PLUSPARFYTE.

If I had had, if thou hadest had, if he had had, if we had had, if ye had
Se j'eusse eu, se tu eusse eu, se il eust eu, se nous eussions eu, se uous eussiez

had, if they had had.
eu, se ilz eussent eu.

The fyrst future, which may be tourned XXXVI maner of wayes as the indicatyve.

As I shulde have, thou he we
Comme j'aroie, tu arois, il aroit, nous arions,

ye shulde have, they shulde have.
uous ariez, ilz aroient.

Page 974

THE SECONDE FUTURE.

So that I have, that thou have, that he have, that we have, that ye have,
that they have.
Mais que j'aye, que tu aye, quil ayt, que nous aions, que vous ayes,
quilz ayent.

THE INFINITIF.

To have.
Auoir.

THE PRETERIT. To have had.
Auoir eu.

GERUNDIVES. To have, for to have, in havynge.
Dauoir, pour auoir, en ayant.

THE OVERTHROWN or I you wolde had, I you desire had.
SUPINS. Je uous uouldroie eu, je vous desire eu.

And thus endeth the conjugation of this verbe, have.

Here foloweth a conjugation of an hundred and eight wayes in one
tence onely, wher ye shall reherce twise the interrogatyves
of bothe the affirmatyve and negatyve: the fyrst
tyme as it standeth written, and the seconde tyme,
puttinge outhere why or howe before it.

THE FYRST PERSONE.

I knowe me, I knowe the, I knowe hym.
Je me congnoy, je te congnoy, je le congnoy.

Why knowe I me, why knowe I the, why knowe I hym.
Pourquoy me congnoy je, pourquoy te congnoy je, pourquoy le congnoy je.

I knowe nat me, I knowe nat the, I knowe nat hym.
Je ne me congnoy pas, je ne te congnoy pas, je ne le congnoy pas

Howe knowe nat I me, howe knowe nat I the, howe knowe nat I hym.
Come ne me congnoy je pas, come ne te congnoy je pas, come ne le congnoy je pas

THE SECOND PERSONE.

Thou knowest me, thou the, thou him.
Tu me congnois, tu te congnois, tu le congnois.

How knowest thou me, how thou the, howe thou hym.
Come me congnois tu, come te congnoys tu, come le congnoys tu.

Page 975

Thou knowest nat me, thou nat the, thou nat hym.
Tu ne me congnois pas, tu ne te congnois pas, tu ne le congnois pas.

Howe knowest thou nat me, howe thou nat the, howe thou nat hym.
Come ne me congnoys tu pas, come ne te congnois tu pas, come ne le congnois tu pas.

THE THIRDE PERSON.

He knewe me, he the, he him.
Il me congnoit, il te congnoit, il le congnoit.

Howe knewe he me, howe he the, howe he him.
Come me congnoit il, come te congnoit il, come le congnoit il.

He knewe nat me, he nat the, he nat him.
Il ne me congnoit pas, il ne te congnoyt pas, il ne le congnoit pas.

How knewe nat he me, howe nat he the, howe nat he him.
Come ne me congnoit il pas, come ne te congnoit il pas, come ne le congnoit il pas.

THE PLUREL NOMBRE.

We knowe us, we you, we them.
Nous nous congnoissons, nous uous congnoissons, nous les congnoissons.

How know we us, how we you, how we them.
Come nous cognoissons nous, come uous cognoissons nous, come les cognoissons nous.

We know us nat, we you nat, we them nat.
Nous ne nous cognoissons pas, nous ne uous cognoissons pas, nous ne les cognoissons pas.

Why do we nat know us, why do we nat you,
Pourquoy ne nous cognoissons nous pas, pourquoy ne uous cognoissons nous pas,

why do we nat them.
pourquoy ne les cognoissons nous pas.

THE SECONDE PERSONE.

Ye us know, ye you know, ye them know.
Uous nous cognoissés, uous uous cognoissés, uous les cognoissés.

Howe know ye us, how you us, how they us.
Come nous cognoissés uous, come uous cognoissés uous, come les cognoissés uous.

Ye know us nat, ye you nat, ye them
Uous ne nous cognoissés pas, uous ne uous cognoissés pas, uous ne les cognoissés

nat.
pas.

How know ye nat us, how ye nat you, how
Come ne nous cognoissés uous pas, come ne uous cognoissés uous pas, come ne les

ye nat them.
cognoissés uous pas.

Page 976

THE THYRDE PERSONE.

They know us, they you, they them.
Ilz nous congnoissent, ilz uous congnoissent, ilz les congnoissent.

How know they us, how they you, how they them.
Come nous congnoissent ilz, come uous congnoissent ilz, come les congnoissent ilz.

They dyd nat know us, they dyd nat you, they dyd nat them.
Ilz ne nous congnoissent pas, ilz ne uous congnoissent pas, ilz ne les congnoissent pas.

How know they nat us, how they nat you,
Come ne nous congnoissent ilz pas, come ne uous congnoissent ilz pas,

howe they nat them.
come ne les congnoissent ilz pas.

THE PRETERIT IMPARFET.

I dyd know me, I dyd the, I dyd him.
Je me cognoissoie, je te cognoissoie, je le cognoissoie.

How dyd I know me, how dyd I the, how dyd I him.
Come je me cognoissoye je, come te cognoissoie je, come le cognoissoie je.

I dyd nat knowe me, I dyd nat the, I dyd nat him.
Je ne me cognoissoie pas, je ne te congnoissoie pas, je ne le congnoissoie pas.

Why dyd nat I know me, how dyd I nat you,
Pourquoy ne me cognoissoie je pas, pourquoy ne te cognoissoie je pas,

how dyd nat I him.
pourquoy ne le cognoissoie je pas.

THE SECONDE PERSONE.

Thou dydest knew me, thou dydest the, thou dydest him.
Tu me cognoissois, tu te cognoissois, tu le cognoissois.

How dydest thou know me, howe dydest thou the, how dydest thou him.
Come me cognoissois tu, come te cognoissois tu, come le cognoissois tu.

Thou dydest nat know me, thou dydest nat the, thou dydest nat him.
Tu ne me cognoissois pas, tu ne te cognoissois pas, tu ne le cognoissois pas.

How dydest thou nat know me, how dydest thou nat the, how dydest thou nat him.
Come ne me congnoissois tu pas, come ne te congnoissois tu pas, come ne le congnoissois tu pas.

THE THYRDE PERSONE.

He dyd know me, he dyd the, he dyd hym.
Il me cognoissoit, il te cognoissoit, il le cognoissoit.

Page 977

Howe dyd he knowe me, how dyd he the, howe dyd he hym.
Come me cognoissoit il, come te cognoissoit il, come le cognoissoit il.

He dyd nat knowe me, he dyd nat the, he dyd nat hym.
Il ne me cognoissoit pas, il ne te cognoissoit pas, il ne le cognoissoit pas.

How dyd nat he know me, howe dyd nat he the, how dyd nat he him.
Come ne me congnoissoit il pas, come ne te congnoissoit il pas, come ne le congnoissoit il pas.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We dyd knowe us, we dyd you, we dyd them.
Nous nous congnoissions, nous uous congnoissions, nous les congnoissions.

Howe dyd we knowe us, howe dyd we you, how dyd we them.
Come nous congnoissions nous, come uous congnoissions nous, come les congnoissions nous.

We dyd nat know us, we dyd nat you, we dyd nat them.
Nous ne nous congnoissions pas, nous ne uous congnoissions pas, nous ne les congnoissions pas.

Why dyd nat we know us, why dyd nat we know you,
why dyd nat we know them.
Pourquoy ne nous congnoissions nous pas, pourquoy ne uous congnoissions nous pas,
pourquoy ne les congnoissions nous pas.

THE SECONDE PERSONE.

Ye dyd knowe us, ye dyd knowe you, ye dyd knowe them.
Uous nous cognoissés, uous uous cognoissés, uous les cognoissés.

Howe dyd ye knowe us, howe dyd ye knowe you, how dyd ye know them.
Come nous cognoissés uous, come uous cognoissés uous, come les cognoissés uous.

Ye dyd nat know us, ye dyd nat know you, ye dyd nat know them.
Uous ne nous cognoissés pas, uous ne uous cognoissés pas, uous ne les cognoissés pas.

Howe dyd ye nat knowe us, how dyd ye nat know you,
how dyd ye nat know them.
Come ne nous cognoissés uous pas, come ne uous cognoissés uous pas,
come ne les cognoissés uous pas.

THE THYRDE PERSONE.

They dyd know us, they dyd you, they dyd them.
Ilz nous cognoissoient, ilz uous cognoissoient, ilz les cognoissoient.

How dyd they know us, how dyd they you, how dyd they them.
 Come nous congnoissoient ilz, come uous congnoissoient ilz, come les congnoissoient ilz.

They dyd nat know us, they dyd nat you, they dyd nat them,
 Ilz ne nous congnoissoient pas, ilz ne uous congnoissoient pas, ilz ne les congnoissoient pas.

How dyd they nat know us, how dyd they nat you, how dyd they
 Come ne nous congnoissoient ilz pas, come ne uous congnoissoient ilz pas, come ne les
 nat them,
 congnoissoient ilz pas.

THE PRETERIT PARFET.

I knew me, I the, I him.
 Je me cogneus, je le cogneus, je le cogneus.

How knew I me, how I the, how I him.
 Come me cogneus je, come te cogneus je, come le cogneus je.

I knewe nat me, I nat the, I nat him.
 Je ne me cogneus pas, je ne le cogneus pas, je ne le cogneus pas.

Howe knew nat I me, howe nat I the, howe nat I him.
 Come ne me cogneus je pas, come ne te cogneus je pas, come ne le cogneus je pas.

THE SECONDE PARSONE.

Thou knewest me, thou the, thou him.
 Tu me cogneus, tu te cogneus, tu le cogneus.

Why knewest the me, why the the, why the him.
 Pourquoi me cogneus tu, pourquoi te cogneus tu, pourquoi le cogneus tu.

Thou knewest nat me, thou nat the, thou nat him.
 Tu ne me cogneus pas, tu ne te cogneus pas, tu ne le cogneus pas.

How knewest thou nat me, how thou nat the, how thou nat him.
 Come ne me cogneus tu pas, come ne te cogneus tu pas, come ne le cogneus tu pas.

THE THYRDE PERSONE.

He knew me, he the, he him.
 Il me cogneut, il te cogneut, il le cogneut.

How knew he me, how he the, how he him.
 Come me cogneut il, come te cogneut il, come le cogneut il.

He knew nat me, he nat the, he nat him.
 Il ne me cogneut pas, il ne le cogneut pas, il ne le cogneut pas.

Why knew nat he me, why nat he the, why
 Pourquoi ne me cogneut il pas, pourquoi ne te cogneut il pas, pourquoi ne le
 nat he him.
 cogneut il pas.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We knew us, we you, we them.
 Nous nous cogneusmes, nous uous cogneusmes, nous les cogneusmes.

How knew we us, how we you, how we
 Come nous cogneusmes nous, come uous cogneusmes nous, come les cogneusmes
 them.
 nous.

We knew nat us, we nat you, we nat
 Nous ne nous cogneusmes pas, nous ne uous cogneusmes pas, nous ne les cogneusmes
 them.
 pas.

How knew we nat us, how we nat you, how
 Come ne nous cogneusmes nous pas, come ne uous cogneusmes nous pas, come ne
 we nat them.
 les cogneusmes nous pas.

THE SECONDE PERSONE.

Ye knew us, ye you, ye them.
Uous nous cogneustes, uous uous cogneustes, uous les cogneustes.

How knew ye us, how ye you, how ye them.
Come nous cogneustes uous, come uous cogneustes uous, come les cogneustes uous.

Ye knew nat us, ye nat you, ye nat them.
Uous ne nous cogneustes pas, uous ne uous cogneustes pas, uous ne les cogneustes pas.

How knew ye nat us, how ye nat you, how ye nat them.
Come ne nous cogneustes uous pas, come ne uous cogneustes uous pas, come ne les cogneustes uous pas.

THE THYRDE PERSONE.

They knew us, they you, they them.
Ilz nous cogneurent, ilz uous cogneurent, ilz les cogneurent.

How knew they us, how they you, how they them.
Come nous cogneurent ilz, come uous cogneurent ilz, come les cogneurent ilz.

They knewe nat us, they nat you, they nat them.
Ilz ne nous cogneurent pas, ilz ne uous cogneurent pas, ilz ne les cogneurent pas.

Page 980

Howe knewe they nat us, how they nat you, how they nat them.
Come ne nous cogneurent ilz pas, come ne uous cogneurent ilz pas, come ne les cogneurent ilz pas.

THE PRETERIT INDIFFINITIF.

I have knowen me, I have the, I have him.
Je may cogneu, je tay cogneu, je lay cogneu.

How have I knowen me, how have I the, how have I him.
Come may je cogneu, come tay je cogneu, come lay je cogneu.

How have nat I knowen me, how have nat I the, how have nat I him.
Come ne may je pas cogneu, come ne tay je pas cogneu, come ne lay je pas cogneu.

THE SECONDE PARSONE.

Thou hast knowen me, thou hast the, thou hast him.
Tu mas cogneu, tu te as cogneu, tu las cogneu.

How hast thou knowen me, how hast thou the, how hast thou him.
Come mas tu cogneu, come tas tu cogneu, come las tu cogneu.

Thou hast nat knowen me, thou hast nat the, thou hast nat him.
Tu ne mas pas cogneu, tu ne tas pas cogneu, tu ne las pas cogneu.

How hast nat thou knowen me, how hast nat thou the, how hast nat thou him.
Come ne mas tu pas cogneu, come ne las tu pas cogneu, come ne las tu pas cogneu.

THE THYRDE PERSONE.

He hath knowen me, he hath the, he hath him.
Il ma cogneu, il ta cogneu, il la cogneu.

How hath he knowen me, how hath he he, how hath he him.
Come ma il cogneu, come ta il cogneu, come la il cogneu.

He hath nat knowen me, he hath nat the, he hath nat him.
Il ne ma pas cogneu, il ne ta pas cogneu, il ne la pas cogneu.

How hath nat he knowen me, how hath nat he the, how hath nat he him.
Come ne ma il pas cogneu, come ne ta il pas cogneu, come ne la il pas cogneu.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We have knowen us, we have you, we have them.
Nous nous auons cogneu, nous uous auons cogneu, nous les auons cogneu.

Howe have we knowen us, how have we you, how have we
Come nous auons nous cogneu, come uous auons nous cogneu, come les auons

them.
nous cogneu.

Page 981

We have nat knowen us, we have nat you, we have nat
Nous ne nous auons pas cogneu, nous ne nous auons pas cogneu, nous ne les auons

them.
pas cogneu.

How have we nat knowen us, how have we nat you, how
Come ne nous auons nous pas cogneu, come ne uous auons nous pas cogneu, come

have we nat them.
ne les auons nous pas cogneu.

THE SECONDE PERSONE.

Ye have knowen us, ye have you, ye have knowen them.
Uous nous aues cogneu, uous uous aues cogneu, uous les aues cogneu.

Howe have ye knowen us, have ye you, have ye
Come nous aues uous cogneu, come uous aues uous cogneu, come les aues uous

them.
cogneu.

Ye have nat knowen us, ye have nat you, ye have nat
Uous ne nous aues pas cogneu, uous ne uous aues pas cogneu, uous ne les aues

them.
pas cogneu.

How have nat you knowen us, how have nat ye you, how
Come ne nous aues uous pas congneu, come ne uous aues uous pas congneu, come

have nat ye them.
ne les aues uous pas cogneu.

THE THYRDE PERSONE.

They have knowen me, they have you, they have them.
Ilz me ont cogneu, ilz te ont cogneu, ilz les ont cogneu.

How have they knowen me, how have they the, how have they them.
Come mont ilz cogneu, come te ont ilz cogneu, come les ont ilz cogneu.

They have nat knowen me, they have nat you, they have nat them.
Ilz ne mont pas cogneu, ilz ne tont pas cogneu, ilz ne les ont pas cogneu.

How have they nat knowen me, how have they nat you, how have they nat
Come ne mont ilz pas cogneu, come ne tont ilz pas cogneu, come ne les ont ilz pas

them.
cogneu.

THE PRETERIT PLUS PARFET.

I had knowen me, I had the, I had him.
Je mauoy cogneu, je tauoy cogneu, je lauoy cogneu.

Page 982

How had I knowen me, how had I the, how had I him.
Come mauoy je cogneu, come tauoy je cogneu, come lauoy je cogneu.

I had nat knowen me, I had nat the, I had nat him.
Je ne mauoy pas congneu, je ne tauoy pas cogneu, je ne lauoy pas cogneu.

How had nat I knowen me, how had nat I the, how had nat I him.
Come ne mauoy je pas cogneu, come ne tauoy je pas cogneu, come ne lauoy je pas cogneu.

THE SECONDE PERSONE.

Thou hadest knowen me, thou hadest the, thou hadest him.
Tu mauoys cogneu, tu tauoys cogneu, tu lauoys congneu.

How hadest thou knowen me, how hadest thou the, how hadest thou him.
Come mauoys tu cogneu, come tauoys tu cogneu, come lauoys tu cogneu.

Thou hadest nat knowen me, thou hadest nat the, thou hadest nat him.
Tu ne mauoys pas cogneu, tu ne tauoys pas cogneu, tu ne lauoys pas cogneu.

How hadest thou nat knowen me, how hadest thou nat the, how hadest thou nat him.
Come ne mauois tu pas cogneu, come ne tauoys tu pas cogneu, come ne lauoys tu pas cogneu.

THE THYRDE PERSONE.

He had knowen me, he had the, he had him.
Il mauoit cogneu, il tauoit cogneu, il lavoit cogneu.

How had he knowen me, how had he the, how had he him.
Come mauoit il cogneu, come tauoyt il cogneu, come lauoyt il cogneu.

He had nat knowen me, he had nat the, he had nat him.
Il ne mauoit pas cogneu, il ne tauoyt pas cogneu, il ne lauoyt pas cogneu.

How had nat he knowen me, how had nat he the, how had nat he him.
Come ne mauoyt il pas cogneu, come ne tauoit il pas cogneu, come ne lavoit il pas cogneu.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We had knowen us, we had you, we had him.
Nous nous auions cogneu, nous uous auions cogneu, nous les auions cogneu.

How had we knowen us, how had we you, how had we them.
Come nous auions nous cogneu, come uous auions nous cogneu, come les auions nous cogneu.

Page 983

We had nat knowen us, we had nat you, we had nat them.
Nous ne nous auions pas cogneu, nous ne uous auions pas cogneu, nous ne les auions pas cogneu.

Howe had nat we knowen us, how had nat we you,
how had nat we them.
Come ne nous auions nous pas cogneu, come ne uous auions nous pas cogneu,
come ne les auions nous pas cogneu.

THE SECONDE PERSONE.

Ye had knowen us, ye had you, ye had them.
Uous nous auies cogneu, uous uous auies cogneu, uous les auies cogneu.

How had ye knowen us, how had ye you, how had ye them.
Come nous auies uous cogneu, come uous auiez nous cogneu, come les auies uous cogneu.

Ye had nat knowen us, ye had nat you, ye had nat them.
Uous ne nous auies pas cogneu, uous ne uous auies pas cogneu, uous ne les auies pas cogneu.

How had nat ye knowen me, how had nat ye you,
Come ne nous auies uous pas cogneu, come ne les auies uous pas cogneu,

how had nat ye them.
come ne uous auies uous pas cogneu.

THE THYRDE PERSONE.

They had knowen us, they had you, they had them.
Ilz nous auoient cogneu, ilz uous auoient cogneu, ilz les auoient cogneu.

How had they knowen us, how had they you, how had they them.
Come nous auoient ilz cogneu, come uous auoient ilz cogneu, come les auoient ilz cogneu.

They had nat knowen us, they had nat you, they had nat them.
Ilz ne nous auoient pas cogneu, ilz ne uous auoient pas cogneu, ilz ne les auoient pas cogneu.

How had they nat knowen us, how had they nat you,
how had they nat them.
Come ne nous auoient ilz pas cogneu, come ne uous auoient ilz pas cogneu,
come ne les auoient ilz pas cogneu.

Page 984

THE FUTURE.

I shall know me, I shall the, I shall him.
Je me cognoistray, je te cognoistray, je le cognoistray.

How shall I know me, how shall I the, how shall I him.
Come me cognoistray je, come te cognoistray je, come le cognoistray je.

I shall nat know me, I shall nat the, I shall nat him.

Je ne me congnoistray pas, je ne te congnoistray pas, je ne le congnoistray pas.

How shall nat I know me, how shall nat I the, how shall nat I him.
Come ne me cognoistray je pas, come ne te cognoistray je pas, come ne le cognoistray je pas.

THE SECONDE PERSONE.

Thou shalt know me, thou shall the, thou shalt him.
Tu me cognoistras, tu te cognoistras, tu le cognoistras.

How shalt thou knowe me, how shalt thou the, how shalt thou him.
Come me cognoistras tu, come te cognoistras tu, come le cognoistras tu.

Thou shalt nat knowe me, thou shalt nat the, thou shalt nat him.
Tu ne me cognoistras pas, tu ne te cognoistras pas, tu ne le cognoistras pas.

How shalt thou nat knowe me, how shalt thou nat the, how shall thou nat him.
Come ne me cognoistras tu pas, come ne te cognoistras tu pas, come ne le cognoistras tu pas.

THE THIRDE PERSONE.

He shall know me, he shall the, he shall him.
Il me cognoistras, il te cognoistras, il le cognoistras.

How shall he knowe me, how shall he the, how shall he him.
Come me cognoistra il, come te cognoistra il, come le cognoistra il.

He shall nat knowe me, he shall nat the, he shall nat him.
Il ne me cognoistras pas, il ne te cognoistras pas, il ne le cognoistras pas.

How shall nat he knowe me, how shall nat he the, how shall nat he him.
Come ne me cognoistra il pas, come ne te cognoistra il pas, come ne le cognoistra il pas.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We shall know us, we shall you, we shall them.
Nous nous cognoistrans, nous uous cognoistrans, nous les cognoistrans.

Page 985

How shall we know us, how shall we you, how shall we them.
Come nous cognoistrans nous, come uous cognoistrans nous, come les cognoistrans nous.

We shall nat knowe us, we shall nat you, we shall nat them.
Nous ne nous cognoistrans pas, nous ne uous cognoistrans pas, nous ne les cognoistrans pas.

How shall nat we knowe us, how shall nat we you,
Come ne nous cognoistrans nous pas, come ne uous cognoistrans nous pas,

how shall nat we them.
come ne les cognoistrans nous pas.

THE SECONDE PERSONE.

Ye shall know us, ye shall you, ye shall them.
Uous nous cognoistres, uous uous cognoistres, uous les cognoistres.

How shall ye know us, how shall ye you, how shall ye them.
Come nous cognoistres uous, come uous cognoistres uous, come les cognoistres nous.

Ye shall nat knowe us, ye shall nat you, ye shall nat them.
Uous ne nous cognoistres pas, uous ne uous cognoistres pas, uous ne les cognoistres pas.

How shall ye nat know us, how shall ye nat you,
how shall ye nat them.
Come ne nous cognoistres uous pas, come ne uous cognoistres nous pas,
come ne les cognoistres uous pas.

THE THIRDE PARSONE.

They shall know us, they shall you, they shall them.
Ilz nous cognoistront, ilz uous cognoistront, ilz les cognoistront.

How shall they know us, how shall they you, how shall they them.
Come nous cognoistront ilz, come uous cognoistront ilz, come les cognoistront ilz.

They shall nat know us, they shall nat you, they shall nat them.
Ilz ne nous cognoistront pas, ilz ne uous cognoistront pas, ilz ne les cognoistront pas.

How shall they nat know us, how shall they nat you,
Come ne nous cognoistront ilz pas, come ne uous cognoistront ilz pas,

how shall they nat them.
come ne les cognoistront ilz pas.

Page 986

THE IMPERATYVE.

Know thou, know he or him, know we, know ye know they.
Cognoys toi, cognoisse soy, cognoissons nous, cognoisses uous, cognoissent eulz ou elles.

THE FUTURE.

Loke that thou know the, that he himselfe, that we know us,
Garde que tu te cognoisse, quil se cognoisse, que nous nous cognoissons,

That ye you, that they themselfe.
que uous uous cognoissez, quilz se cognoissent.

THE FUTUR NEGATYVE.

Do that thou knoweth nat, that he knoweth nat, that we knoweth nat,
Faitz que tu ne cognoisse, quil ne cognoisse, que nous ne cognoissons,

that ye nat, that they nat.
que uous ne cognoissez, quilz ne cognoissent.

THE OPTATIVE FUTUR.

I pray you that I may knowe, that thou know.
Je uous prie que je cognoisse, que tu cognoisse, etc. lyke the imperatyve.

THE PRETERIT IMPARFET.

O yf I knew, yf thou, yf he, yf we knew,
O se je cogneusse, se tu congneusse, se il cogneusse, se nous cogneussions,

yf you, yf they knew.
se uous cogneussies, se ilz cogneussent.

THE PRETERIT PARFET.

With my wyll that I have knowen, that thou hast, that he hath, that we have,
A ma uoullente que jaye cogneu, que tu aye cogneu, quil ayt cogneu, que nous ayons cogneu,

that ye have, that they have knowen.
que uous ayez cogneu, quilz ayent cogneu.

THE PRETERIT PLUS PARFET.

Wold to God that I had knowen, that thou hadest, that he had,
Pleust a Dieu que jesse cogneu, que tu eusse cogneu, quil eust cogneu,

that we had, that ye had, that they had knowen.
que nous eussions cogneu, que uous eussiez cogneu, quilz eussent cogneu.

Page 987

The subjunctive present and thre preterites is lyke the optative, puttyng before the verbe, *ueu*, or *come*, etc.

THE FYRST FUTURE OF THE CONJUNCTYVE.

Whan I shall knowe, thou shall, he shall know: we shall,
Mais que je cognoisse, que tu, quil cognoisse; que nous cognoissons,

ye shall, they shall know.
que uous cognoisses, quilz cognoissent.

THE SECONDE FUTURE.

Whan I shulde knowe, thou shulde, he shulde: we shulde,
Quant je cognoistroye, que tu cognoistrois, quil cognoistroit: que nous cognoistrions,

ye shulde, they shuld know.
que uous cognoistriez, quilz cognoistroient.

to know. to have knowen. to know,

THE INFINITIVE, cognoistre. THE PRETERIT, auoir cogneu. THE GERUNDIF, a cognoistre,

for to knowe, in knowyng. I the wyshe knowen.
pour cognoistre, en cognoissant. THE SUPIN or OVERTHROWEN, je te souhaite cogneu.

And so ende this conjugation.

Here doth folowe the conjugation of this verbe *am*, the which is as an instrument wherby we do expresse by our wordes all verbes passives, fewe except, and all that we do suffre, the whiche may be turned lyke the verbe precedent, as *je me, je te, je le suis*.

But for to eschewe prolixite, we shal tourne him but VI maner ways in every persone.

I am, why am I.
Je suis, pourquoi suis je.

I am nat, why am nat I.
Je ne suis pas, come ne suis je pas.

Thou arte, why art thou.
Tu es, come es tu.

Thou art nat, why art nat thou.
Tu nes pas, pourquoi nes tu pas.

Page 988

He is, why is he.
Il est, pourquoi est il.

He is nat, why is he nat.
Il nest pas, come nest il pas.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We be, why be we.
Nous sommes, pourquoi sommes nous.

We be nat, why be nat we.
Nous ne sommes pas, pourquoi ne sommes nous pas.

Ye be, why be ye.
Uous estes, pourquoi estes uous.

Ye be nat, why be ye nat.
Uous nestes pas, pourquoi nestes uous pas.

They be, why be they.
Ilz sont, pourquoi sont ilz.

They be nat, why be nat they.
Ilz ne sont pas, pourquoi ne sont ilz pas.

THE PRETERIT IMPARFET.

Note that the preterit imperfet and perfet have but one exposition in this verbe.

I was beyng, why was I.
Jestoie, pourquoi estoye je.

I was nat, why was nat I.
Je nestoy pas, pourquoi nestoy je pas.

Thou was, why was thou.
Tu estois, pourquoi estois tu.

Thou was nat, why was nat thou.
Tu nestois pas, pourquoi nestois tu pas.

He was, why was he,
Il estoit, pourquoi estoit il.

He was nat, why was nat he.
Il nestoit pas, pourquoi nestoit il pas.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We were, why were we.
Nous estions, pourquoi estions nous.

We were nat, why were we nat.
Nous nestions pas, pourquoi nestions nous pas.

Page 989

Ye were, why were ye.
Uous estiez, pourquoi estiez uous.

Ye were nat, why were ye nat.
Uous nestiez pas, pourquoi nestiez uous pas.

They were, why were they.
Ilz estoient, pourquoi estoient ilz.

They were nat, why were they nat.
Ilz nestoient pas, pourquoi nestoient ilz pas.

THE PRETERIT PARFET.

I was, why was I.
Je fus, pourquoi fus je.

I was nat, why was nat I.
Je ne fus point, pourquoi ne fus je point.

Thou was, why was thou.
Tu fus, pourquoi fus tu.

Thou was nat, why was nat thou.
Tu ne fus pas, pourquoi ne fus tu pas.

He was, why was he.
Il fust, pourquoi fust il.

He was nat, why was nat he.
Il ne fust pas, pourquoi ne fust il pas.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We were, why were we.
Nous fusmes, pourquoi fusmes nous.

We were nat, why were nat we.
Nous ne fusmes pas, pourquoi ne fusmes nous pas.

Ye were, why were ye.
Uous fustes, pourquoi fustes uous.

Ye were nat, why were nat ye.
Uous ne fustes pas, pourquoi ne fustes uous pas.

They were nat, why were they nat.
Ilz ne furent pas, pourquoi ne furent ilz pas.

THE PRETERIT INDIFINITYF.

I have ben, why have I ben.
Jay esté, pourquoi ay je esté.

990

I have nat ben, why have nat I ben.
Je nay pas esté, pourquoi nay je pas esté.

Thou hast ben, why hast thou ben.
Tu as esté, pourquoi as tu esté.

Thou hast nat ben, why hast nat thou ben.
Tu nas pas esté, pourquoi nas tu pas esté.

He hath ben, why hath he ben.
Il a esté, pourquoi a il esté.

He hath nat ben, why hath nat he ben.
Il na pas esté, pourquoi na il pas esté.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We have ben, why have we ben.
Nous auons esté, pourquoi auons nous esté.

We have nat ben, why have we nat ben.
Nous nauons pas esté, pourquoi nauons nous pas esté.

Ye have ben, why have ye ben.
Uous auez esté, pourquoi auez-uons esté.

Ye have nat ben, why have nat ye ben.

Uous naués pas esté, pourquoy naués uous pas esté.

They have ben, why have they ben.
Ilz ont esté, pourquoy ont ilz esté.

They have nat ben, why have nat they ben.
Ilz nont pas esté, pourquoy nont ilz pas esté.

THE PRETERIT MOST PARFET.

I had ben, why had I ben.
Jauoy esté, come auoy je esté.

I had nat ben, why had nat I ben.
Je nauoys pas esté, come nauoy je pas esté.

Thou hadest ben, why hadest thou ben.
Tu auoys esté, come auois tu esté.

Thou hadest nat ben, why hadest nat thou ben.
Tu nauois pas esté, come nauois tu pas esté.

He had nat ben, why had nat he ben.
Il nauoit pas esté, come nauoit il pas esté.

Page 991

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We had ben, why had we ben.
Nous auions esté, pourquoy auions nous esté.

We had nat ben, why had nat we ben.
Nous nauions pas esté, pourquoy nauions nous pas esté.

Ye had ben, why had ye ben.
Uous auiez esté, pourquoy auiez uous esté.

Ye had nat ben, why had nat ye ben.
Uous nauiez pas esté, pourquoy nauiez uous pas esté.

They had ben, why had they ben.
Ils auoient esté, come auoient ilz esté.

They had nat ben, why had they nat ben.
Ilz nauoient pas esté, come nauoient ilz pas esté.

THE FUTURE.

I shall be, why shall I be.
Je seray, come seray je.

I shall nat be, why shall nat I be.
Je ne seray pas, come ne seray je pas.

Thou shalt be, why shalt thou be.
Tu seras, pourquoy seras tu.

Thou shalt nat be, why shalt thou nat be.
Tu ne seras pas, pourquoy ne seras tu pas.

He shalbe, why shall he be.
Il sera, pourquoy sera il.

He shall nat be, why shall nat he be.
Il ne sera pas, pourquoy ne sera il pas.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We shalbe, why shall we be.
Nous serons, pourquoy serons nous.

We shall nat be, why shall we nat be.
Nous ne serons pas, pourquoy ne serons nous pas.

Ye shalbe, why shall ye be.
Uous seres, pourquoy seres uous.

Ye shall nat be, why shall nat ye be.
Uous ne serés pas, pourquoy ne serés uous pas.

Page 992

They shall nat be, why shall nat they be.
Ilz ne seront pas, pourquoy ne seront ilz pas.

THE IMPERATYVE.

Be thou, be he, be we, be ye, be they.
Sois toy, soit il, soions nous, soiez uous, soient ilz.

BOTH THE FUTURES.

Do that thou be, that he be, that we be, that ye be, that they be.
Fais que tu sois, quil soyt, que nous soions, que uous soyez, quilz soient.

Do that thou be nat, that he be nat, that we be nat, that ye be
Fais que tu ne sois pas, quil ne soit pas, que nous ne soyons pas, que uous ne
nat, that they be nat.
soiez pas, quilz ne soient pas.

THE OPTATYVE.

I pray you that I be, that thou be, that he be, that we be, that ye be,
Je uous prie que je soie, que tu sois, quil soit, que nous soions, que uous soyez,
that they be.
quils soyent.

THE PRETERIT IMPARFIT.

Wold to God that I were, that thou, that he,
Pleust a Dieu que je fusse, que tu fusse, quil fusse.

That we, that ye, that they were.
Que nous fussions, que uous fussés, quilz fussent.

THE PRETERIT PARFET.

With my wyll that I have ben, that thou, that he, that we,
A ma uoullenté que jaye esté, que tu aye esté, quil ayt esté, que nous ayons esté,

that ye, that they have ben.
que uous ayez esté, quilz ayent esté.

THE PRETERIT PLUS PARFYTE.

Oh if I had ben, if thou haddest ben, if he, if we had ben,
O sy jeusse esté, se tu eusse esté, sil eust esté, se nous eussions esté,

if ye, if they.
se uous eusses esté, silz eussent esté.

The conjunctive is both in the present and preterites, lyke the optatyve.

Page 993

Whan I shalbe, thou, he: we,
THE FYRST FUTURE. Mais que soie, que tu sois, quil soit: mais que nous soyons,

ye, they shalbe.
que uous soyéz, quilz soient.

THE FUTURE BOROWED OF THE POTENCIALL MODE.

I shulde be, thou shulde be, he shuld be: we shulde be, ye shulde be, they shulde be.
Je seroye, tu serois, il seroit: nous serions, uous seriés, ilz seroient.

to be. haue ben. for to be, in beyng.

THE INFINITYVE, estre. THE PRETERIT, avoir esté, GERUNDIF, pour estre, en estant, etc.

And thus finishe this conjugation.

Also it is to be noted that there ben certayne answeres bothe in the affyrmatyon, and negation of a thyng: as whan one doth say, *I am*: and they may say, *ye be nat*: where he may answere agayne, *I am*: and the other grauntynge the same shall say, *so are ye*. And lykewise whan one doth affirme a thyng by way of negation: as whan he doth say, *I am nat*, if any wyll deny the same, he shall saye, *ye be*, and if he wyll graunt unto it, he shall saye, *no more are ye*. For example of the whiche I wyll make therof a conjugation full requisyte and necessary to the frenche tonge. But ye shall understande that thre verbes onely shall serve you to this purpose: that is to say, *have*, *do*, and *am*: for if one say *I am*, ye may say, *ye be nat*: *I have*, *ye have nat*: and *I do*, *ye do nat*: the whiche thre ben principall in this rule.

THE INDICATIVE OF AFFIRMATION.

I am, Je suis,	thou art, tu es,	he is. il est.
I am nat, Non suis,	thou art nat, non es,	he is nat. non est.
But I am, Sy suis,	But thou arte, Sy es,	but he is. sy est.
So am I, Ce suis mon,	So arte thou, ce es mon,	so is he. ce est mon.
We be, Nous sommes,	ye be, vous estes,	they be. Ilz sont.
We be nat, Non sommes,	ye be nat, non estes,	they be nat. non sont.

Page 994

But we be, Sy sommes,	but ye be, sy estes,	but they be. sy sont.
So we be, Ce sommes mon,	so be ye, ce estes mon,	so be they. ce sont mon.

And so forth thorow al the tenses and modes of all the tother twayne, as:

I was, but I dyd, Jestoye, sy faisoie,	I was nat, non estoye, sy faisoie,	but I was: sy estoie:	so was I. cestoie mon.	I sayde, Je dysoie,	I dyd nat, non faisoie,
so dyd I. ce faisoie mon.	I had, Jauoie,	I had nat, non auoie,	but I had, sy auoie,	so had I: ce auoie mon:	je eus, non eus:
I shal have, jaray,	I shall nat, non aray,	but I shall, sy aray,	so shall I. ce aray mon.		

Which three wordes shall serve you to any verbes signifieng either *doing* or *suffryng*.

EXAMPLE FOR NEGATION.

I am nat: Je ne suis pas:	but I am. sy suis.	I am nat: non suis:	no more I am. ce ne suis mon.
I do nat: Je ne fay pas:	but I do. sy fay.	I do nat: non fay:	no more do I. ce ne fay mon.
I have nat: Je nay pas:	but I have. sy ay.	I have nat: non ay:	no more have I. ce nay mon.
Thou hast nat: Tu nas pas:	but thou hast. sy as.	thou hast nat: non as:	no more hast thou. ce nas mon, etc.

Touchyng the conjugation interrogative, as,

Am I: Suis je:	do I: fays je:	have I: ay je:	or no, ou non,
-------------------	-------------------	-------------------	-------------------

ye shall answer, *ouy*, *nenny*, *non*: and to the interrogation negatyve, as,

Am nat I, Ne suis je pas,	do nat I, ne fay je pas,	have nat I, nai je pas,
------------------------------	-----------------------------	----------------------------

ye shal answer as is said before in the example of the negation, wherfore this is sufficient for this present rule.

Another conjugation of these two verbes in latyn *uado* and *eo*, whiche both verbes of one signification signifyeth in englyssh, *I go*, the which *go* is defectyve in the frenche tonge, wherfore the tone must helpe the other.

Page 995

THE PRESENT OF THE SHEWYNG MOODE.

I go, why go I. Je uoy, pourquoy uoy je.
I go nat, why go nat I. Je ne uoy poynt, pourquoy ne uoy je point.

Thou goest, why goest thou.
Tu uas, pourquoi uas tu.

Thou goest nat, why goest thou nat.
Tu ne uas pas, pourquoi ne uas tu pas.

He goeth, why goeth he.
Il ua, pourquoi ua il.

He goeth nat, why goeth nat he.
Il ne ua pas, pourquoi ne ua il pas.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We go, why go we.
Nous allons, pourquoi allons nous.

We go nat, why go nat we.
Nous nallons pas, pourquoi nallons nous pas.

Ye go, why go ye.
Uous alles, pourquoi alles uous.

Ye go nat, why go nat ye.
Uous nalles point, pourquoi nalles uous point.

They go, why go they.
Ilz uont, pourquoi uont ilz.

They go nat, why go nat they.
Ilz ne uont mie, pourquoi ne uont ilz mie.

THE PRETERIT IMPARFET.

I dyd go, why dyd I go.
Jallois, pourquoi allois je.

I dyd nat go, why dyd nat I go.
Je nallois pas, pourquoi nallois je pas.

Thou dydest go, why dydest thou go.
Tu allois, pourquoi allois tu.

Thou dydest nat go, why dydest thou nat go.
Tu nallois point, pourquoi nallois tu point.

Page 996

He dyd go, why dyd he go.
Il alloit; pourquoi alloit il.

He dyd nat go, why dyd nat he go.
Il nalloit pas, pourquoi nalloit il pas.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We dyd go, why dyd we go.
Nous allions, pourquoi allions nous.

We dyd nat go, why dyd nat we go.
Nous nallions mie, pourquoi nallions nous mie.

Ye dyd go, how dyd ye go.
Uous alliéz, coment alliéz uous.

Ye dyd nat go, how dyd nat ye go.
Uous nalliés point, coment nalliés uous point.

They dyd go, how dyd they go.
Ilz alloient, come alloient ilz.

They dyd nat go, how dyd they nat go.
Ilz nalloient pas, come nalloient ilz pas.

THE PRETERIT PARFET.

I went, how went I.
Jalay, coment alay je.

I went nat, how went nat I.
Je nallay pas, coment nallay je pas.

Thou wenst, how wenst thou.
Tu alas, come alas tu.

Thou wenst nat, how wenst nat thou.
Tu nalas mie, come nalas tu mye.

He went, how went he.
Il ala, coment ala il.

He went nat, how went nat he.
Il nala point, coment nala il point.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We went, how went we.
Nous alasmes, come alasmes nous.

We went nat, howe went we nat.
Nous nalasmes point, come nalasmes nous point.

Page 997

Ye went, why went ye.
Uous alastes, pourquoy alastes uous.

Ye went nat, why went ye nat.
Uous nalastes pas, pourquoy nalastes uous pas.

They went, why went they.
Ilz allérent, pourquoy allérent ilz.

They went nat, why went nat they.
Ilz nallérent mie, pourquoy nallérent ilz mye.

THE PRETERIT INDIFINITIF.

I have gone, how have I gone.
Jay allé, coment ay je allé.

I have nat gone, how have nat I gone.
Je nay pas allé, coment nay je pas allé.

Thou hast gone, why hast thou gone.
Tu as allé, pourquoy as tu allé.

Thou hast nat gone, why hast thou nat gone.
Tu nas pas allé, pourquoy nas tu pas allé.

He hath gone, why hath he gone.
Il a allé, pourquoy a il allé.

He hath nat gone, why hath nat he gone.
Il na point allé, pourquoy na il point allé.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We have gone, why have we gone.
Nous auons allé, pourquoy auons nous allé.

We have nat gone, why have we nat gone.
Nous nauons pas allé, pourquoy nauons nous pas allé.

Ye have gone, why have ye gone.
Uous aues allé, pourquoy aues uous allé.

Ye have nat gone, why have nat ye gone.
Uous naués pas allé, pourquoy naués uous pas allé.

They have gone, how have they gone.
Ilz ont allé, come ont ilz allé.

They have nat gone, how have they nat gone.
Ilz nont pas allé, come nont ilz pas allé.

Page 998

THE PRETERIT PLUS PARFET.

I had gone, how had I gone.
Jauoy allé, coment auoy je allé.

I had nat gone, how had nat I gone.
Je nauoy point allé, coment nauoy je point allé.

Thou hadest gone, why hadest thou gone.
Tu auois allé, pourquoi auois tu allé.

Thou hadest nat gone, why hadest thou nat gone.
Tu nauois point allé, pourquoi nauois tu point allé.

He had gone, how had he gone.
Il auoit allé, come auoit il allé.

He had nat gone, how had nat he gone.
Il nauoit pas allé, come nauoit il pas allé.

THE PLURELL NOMBRE.

We had gone, how had we gone.
Nous auions allé, coment auions nous allé.

We had nat gone, how had we nat gone.
Nous nauions point allé, coment nauions nous point allé.

Ye had gone, why had ye gone.
Uous auiez allé, pourquoi auiez uous allé.

Ye had nat gone, why had nat ye gone.
Uous nauiez mie allé, pourquoi nauiez uous mie allé.

They had gone, why had they gone.
Ils auoient allé, pourquoi auoyent ilz allé.

They had nat gone, why had they nat gone.
Ilz nauoient point allé, pourquoi nauoient ilz point allé.

THE FUTURE

I shall go, why shall I go.
Je yray, pourquoi yray je.

I shall nat go, why shall nat I go.
Je nyray pas, pourquoi niray je pas.

Thou shalt go, howe shalt thou go.
Tu yras, coment yras tu.

Thou shalt nat go, howe shalt nat thou go.
Tu niras pas, coment niras tu pas.

Page 999

He shall go, howe shall he go.
Il yra, coment yra il.

He shall nat go, howe shall nat he go.
Il nira point, comment nyra il point.

THE PLURELL.

We shall go, why shall we go.
Nous yrons, pourquoi yrons nous.

We shall nat go, why shall nat we go.
Nous niron pas, pourquoi niron nous pas.

Ye shall go, why shall ye go.
Uous yrés, pourquoi yrés uous.

Ye shall nat go, why shall nat ye go.
Uous nirés pas, pourquoi nirés uous pas.

They shall go, howe shall they go.
Ilz yront, coment yront ilz.

They shall nat go, howe shall they nat go.
Ilz niron mie, coment niron ilz mie.

THE IMPERATYVE.

Go thou, go he, all one; go we, go ye, go they.
Ua toy, aylle luy, uoise luy; alons nous, allés uous, uoisent ou aillent eulx.

THE FYRST FUTURE.

Do that thou go, that he go, that we go, that ye go,

Fais que tu uoyse ou aylle, quil uoise ou aille, que nous allons, que uous allés,

that they go.
quilz uoisent ou aillent.

THE SECOND FUTURE NEGATIF.

Kepe that thou go nat, all one, that he go nat,
Garde que tu ne aylle point, que tu ne uoise point, quil naile poynt,

all one: that we go nat, that ye go nat, that they go nat,
quil ne uoise point: que nous nallons, que uous nallés, quilz ne aillent point,

all one.
uilz ne uoisent point.

THE OPTATIF.

Wold to God, or I pray you that I go, that thou go, that he go:
Pleust a Dieu, ou je uous prie que jaille ou uoise, que tu aille, que il aille:

that we go, that ye go, that they go.
que nous allons, que uous allés, quilz aillent ou uoisent.

Page 1000

THE PRETERIT IMPARFET.

With my wyll that I went, that thou went, that he went: that we went,
A ma uoullenté que jallasse, que tu allasse, que il allast: que nous allissions,

that ye went, that they went.
que uous allissiez, quilz allassent.

THE PRETERIT PARFET.

Wolde to God that I have gone, that thou have gone, that he have gone:
A la mienne uoullenté que jay allé, que tu aie allé, quil ayt allé:

that we have gone, that ye have gone, that they have gone.
que nous ayons allé, que uous ayés allé, quilz ayent allé.

PRETERIT PLUSPARFYTE.

O if I had gone, if thou had gone, if he had gone, if we had gone,
O sy jousse allé, se tu eusse allé, se il eust allé, se nous eussions allé,

if ye had gone, if they had gone.
se uous eussés allé, se ilz eussent allé.

Ye may make a future of the present, sayenge:

With my wyll that I may go anone, etc. all one.
A ma uoullenté que je aylle tantost, etc. que je uoise tantost, etc.

The conjunctif present and thre preterites is lyke the optatif, sayeng:
as whan wolde to God
come or quant, before the verbe, leuyng a ma uoullenté, etc.

The future boroweth of the potentiall moode whiche may be tourned six maner of wayes after the indicatif, or elles XVIII, after the seconde conjunction:

I shuld go, thou, he: we shuld go, ye shuld go, they shuld go.
Je yroie, tu yrois, il yroit: nous yrions, uous yriez, ilz yroient.

THE SECONDE FUTURE.

Whan I shall go, all one, whan thou shalt go, all one, whan he shuld go,
Mais que je aille, que je uoise, que tu aille, que tu uoise, que il aille,

all one, whan we shuld go, whan ye shall go, whan they shal go, all one.
quil uoise, que nous allons, que uous allés, quilz aillent, quilz uoisent.

to go. to be gone. goyng.
THE INFINITYVE, aller. THE PRETERIT, estre allé. THE GERUNDIF, allant.

Finis.

Page 1001

Here foloweth another conjugation, whiche may be turned XXXVI maner wayes lyke the precedent, or els XII in every person, addyng *me, te, le*: lyke the fyrst conjugation, but for to eschewe prolixite it shalbe syngle.

I se, thou seest, he seeth, we se, ye se, they se.
Je uoy, tu uois, il uoit nous ueons, uous uoiez, ilz uoient.

PRETERIT IMPARF.

I dyd se, thou dedest se, he dyd se: we dyd se, ye dyd se, they dyd se.
Je uéoie, tu uéois, il uéoit: nous uéions, uous uéiez, ilz uéoient.

PRETERIT PARF.

I saw, thou saw, he saw: we saw, ye saw, they saw.
Je ueis, tu ueis, il ueist: nous ueismes, uous ueistes, ilz ueirent.

PRETERIT INDIFFINIT.

I have sene, thou hast sene, he hath sene: we have sene, ye have sene,
Jay ueu, tu as ueu, il a ueu: nous auons ueu, uous aués ueu,
they have sene.
ilz ont ueu.

PRETERIT MOST PARFET.

I had sene, thou hadest, he had: we had sene, ye had,
Jauoie ueu, tu auois ueu, il auoit ueu: nous auions ueu, uous auiez ueu,
they had sene.
ilz auoient ueu.

THE FUTURE.

I shall se, thou shalt, he shall: we shall se, ye shall, they shall se.
Je uoiray, tu uoiras, il uoira: nous uoirons, uous uoirés, ilz uoironr.

THE IMPERATIF.

Se thou or he, se we, se ye, se they.
Uois toy ou luy, uoions nous, uoiés uous, uoient eulx, elles, celles.

BOTH FUTURES, AFFIRMATIF AND NEGATIF.

Do that thou seest, or that thou sest nat, that he seeth or that he seeth nat: that
Fais que tu uoie, ou que tu ne uoie point, quil uoie ou quil ne uoie point: que
we se, or that we se nat, that ye se or that ye se
nous uoions, ou que nous ne uoions point, que uous uoiéz ou que uous ne uoiez
nat, that they se, or that they seeth nat.
point, quilz uoient, ou quelles ne uoient point.

Page 1002

THE OPTATIF PRESENT.

Wolde to God, or I pray you that I may se, that thou mayst se, that he may se:
A la mienne uoullenté, ou je uous prie que je uoie, que tu uoie, quil uoie:
that we may se, that ye may se, that they may se.
que nous uoions, que uous uoiez, quilz uoient.

PRETERIT IMPARFET.

Wold to God that I coud se, that thou, that he: that we coude se,
Pleust a Dieu que je ueisse, que tu ueisse, quil ueisse: que nous ueissions,
that ye, that they.
que uous ueissiez, quilz ueissent.

PRETERIT PARFYTE.

With my wyll that I have sene, that thou, that he: that we have sene,
A ma uoullenté que jaie ueu, que tu aie ueu, quil aie ueu: que nous aions ueu,
that ye, that they.
que uous aiéz ueu, quilz aient ueu.

PLUSPARF.

0 if I had sene, if thou hadest, if he had sene: yf we had, if ye had,
0 se jeusse ueu, se tu eusse ueu, sil eusse ueu: se nous eussions, se uous eussiez,
if they had sene.
silz eussent ueu.

The subjunctif is lyke the optatif.

The fyrste future of the subjunctyve is:

I shulde,
Je uoiroie, uoirois, uoiroit, uoirions, uoiriez, uoiroient.

whan I shall se thou he we
THE SECONDE FUTUR: mais que je uoie, que tu uoie, quil uoie: que nous uoions,

you they.
que uous uoiés, quilz uoient.

to se. to have sene, seyng.
THE INFINITIF: ueoir. PRETERIT: auoir ueu, uoiant.

Another conjugation upon *howe do you*, and *how do ye fare*: and if ye do take the verbe after the fyrst conjugation, sayeng: *je porte, porte je, pourquoy porte je, etc.* and lykewise of *je fay, fay je, etc.* ye shal tourne it XXXVI wayes in one tense, and if ye turne it after the seconde conjugacion, ye

Page 1003

shall have an hundred and VIII wayes in one tense, addyng to it *me, te, le, nous nous, uous uous, ilz se.*

Howe do I fare, or beare me, how dost thou fare, or bere the, howe dothe he fare:
Coment me porte je, coment te porte tu, coment se porte il:

howe do we fare, howe do ye fare, howe do they fare,
coment nous portons nous, coment uous portés uous, coment se portent ilz.

THE PRETERIT IMPARFET.

Howe dyd I, howe dedest thou, howe dyd he, howe dyd we
Coment me portoy je, coment te portois tu, coment se portoit il, coment nous

bere us, how dyd ye, howe dyd they.
portions nous, coment uous portiez uous, coment se portoient ilz.

THE PRETERIT PARFET.

Howe dyd I, howe dedest thou, howe dyd he, howe dyd we
Come me portay je, coment te portas tu, coment se porta il, coment nous

beare us, how dyd ye beare you, how dyd they beare them.
portasmes nous, coment uous portaste uous, coment se portèrent ilz.

THE PRETERIT INDIFINITIF.

Howe have I borne me, howe have I, howe hath he: howe have
Coment may je porté, coment tay je porté, coment sa il porté: coment nous

we borne us, howe have ye borne you, howe have they borne them.
auons nous porté, coment uous aués uous porté, coment se sont ilz porté.

THE PRETERIT MOST PARFYTE.

Howe had I borne me, howe hadest thou, howe had he borne him, howe
Coment mauoy je porté, coment tauois tu porté, coment se auoit il porté, coment

had we borne us, howe had ye borne you, howe had they borne them,
nous auions nous porté, coment uous auiez uous porté, coment se auoient ilz porté.

THE FUTURE.

Howe shall I beare me, howe shalt thou bere the, howe shall he beare hym: howe shall
Coment me porteray je, coment te porteras tu, coment se portera il: coment nous

we beare us, howe shall you beare you, howe shall they beare them.
porterons nous, coment uous porterés uous, coment se porteront ilz.

The imperatyve, optatyve, and conjunctyve may nat serve with this

Page 1004

worde, *coment*, save onely the future of the potentiall mode, whiche is:

I shulde beare, thou shuldest, he shulde: we shulde bere, ye shuld, they shulde bere.
Porteroie, porterois, porteroit: porterions, porteriez, porteroient.

And if ye wyll go thorowe the sayd modes, ye shall folowe the termination of this verbe, *I go*,

whiche is sette before.

And touchyng, *howe do you*, ye shall ever put *le* before the verbe, sayeng:

Howe do I, howe dost thou, howe dothe he: howe do we,
Coment le fay je, coment le fais tu, coment le fait il: coment faisons nous,

do ye, do they.
faictes uous, font ilz ou elles.

And lykewise of all the preterites, sayeng:

Howe dyd I, etc. howe dyd I, howe have I done, howe had I done,
Coment le faisoi je, etc. coment le feiz je, coment lay je fait, coment lauoy je fait,

howe shall I do, howe shulde I do, etc.
coment le feray je, coment le feroy je, etc.

Finis.

Here foloweth the conjugation of a verbe defectyve in frenche, whiche is *I am wont*, because it is a verbe rare and syldome used.

I am wont, thou art, he is wont: we be wonte, ye be wonte, they be wonte.
Je seultz, tu seultz, il seult: nous seulmes, uous seultes, ilz seulent.

THE PRETERIT IMPARFET.

I was , thou , he : we , ye, they.
Je soullioie, tu soulliois, il soullioit: nous soullions, uous soulliez, ilz soullioient.

I was ,
Je seultz, tu seultz, il seult: nous seulmes, uous seultes, ilz seurent.

There is nomore of this verbe, for if we procede any further, *we do say*:

I have , I had customed, I shall custome.
je ay de coustume, jauoy de coustume, and jaray de coustume, and so forth.

Anoder verbe defectif which is, *it is lawful to me*; this verbe may be turned XXXVI wayes, accordyng to the fyrst conjugation.

It is to me lafull, it is to the, it is to him, it is to us, it is to you, it is to them lafull.
Il me loise, il te loise, il luy loise, il nous, il uous, ilz leur loise.

Page 1005

PRETERIT IMPARFET.

It was to me lafull, to the, to him lafull: to us, to you, to them lafull or licite.
Il me loisoit, il te, il luy loisoit: il nous, il uous, ilz leur loisoit.

PRETERIT PARFET.

It was ,
Il me loisit, il te, il luy loisit: il nous, il uous, ilz leur loisit.

THE INDIFFINITIF.

It hath ben to me lafull, to the, to him, to us, to you, to them lafull, or behovable.
Il ma esté loisible, il ta esté, il luy a, il nous a, il uous a, ilz leur a esté loisible.

THE PLUS PARFET.

It had ben to me, or els it had behaved me.
Il mauoit esté loisible, il tauoit esté loisible, il luy auoit esté loisible,

il nous, il uous, ilz leur auoit esté loisible.

It shalbe to me,
THE FUTURE is: Il me loysera, ou il me sera loisyble.

Loke that it be nat lafull to the.
THE FUTURE OF THE IMPERATIF, whiche is negatif is: Garde ou faitz quil ne te loise.

That it were to me lafull.
THE OPTATIF. Quil me fust loisible.

THE PRETERIT IMPARFET. Quil me loisisse.

That it have ben to me, that it have ben to him.

THE PARFET. Quil maie esté, quil luy ayt esté loysible, and so forth.

That it had ben to me lafull.

THE PLUS PARFET. Quil meust esté loysible.

THE SUBJUNCTIF, is lyke the optatyve, taking the present for the seconde future.

How it shulde be lafull to me,

THE FYRST FUTURE. Come il me loiserait, come il te loyserait, come il luy loyserait:

come ilz nous loiserait, come ilz uous loiserait, come ilz leur loiserait.

Finis.

A conjugation of this verbe *care*, which for the most parte is negatyve, as *I care nat*, and if ye wyll adde this worde *it* unto the same, sayeng: *I care nat for it*: ye shall put an *n* after every pronoun, as: *il ne men chault, il ne ten, il ne luy en, il ne nous en, il ne uous en, il ne leur en chault*.

I care nat, thou carest nat, he we ye they.

Il ne me chault, il ne te chault, il ne luy: il ne nous, il ne uous, ilz ne leur chault.

Page 1006

PRETERIT IMPARFYTE.

I dyd nat care, ye they
Il ne me, il ne te, il ne luy chaloit: ilz ne nous, ilz ne uous, ilz ne leur chaloit.

PRETERIT PERFECT.

I cared nat,
Il ne me, il ne te, il ne luy chalut: ilz ne nous, ilz ne vous, ilz ne leur chalut.

THE PRETERIT INDIFFINITIF.

I have nat cared.
Il ne ma chalu, etc.

PRETERIT PLUS PERFET.

I had nat cared. ye they
Il ne mauoit, il ne tauoit, il ne luy auoit: ilz ne nous, ilz ne uous, ilz ne leur auoit chalu.

THE FUTURE.

I shall nat care.
Il ne me chauldra, il ne te, il ne luy: ilz ne nous, ilz ne uous, ilz ne leur chauldra.

IMPERATIFE.

Care thou nat, him : care we nat, care ye, care they nat.
Ne te, ne luy chaille: ne nous, ne uous, ne leur chaille.

BOTH FUTURES.

Se that thou care, that thou care nat. Se we that we care, that we nat
Garde quil te chaille, quil ne te chaille. Gardons quil nous chaille, quil ne nous

care. Se ye that ye care, that ye nat care. Let them se that they care.
chaille. Gardés quil uous chaille, quil ne vous chaille. Gardent quil leur chaille,

that they nat care.
quil ne leur chaille.

OPTATIF.

With my wyll that I care, that thou care, that he care: that we care,
A ma uoullenté quil me chaille, quil te chaille, quil luy chaille: quil nous chaille,

that ye care, that they care.
quil uous chaille, quil leur chaille.

THE IMPARFET.

Wold to God that I care, that thou , that he , that we,
Pleust a Dieu quil me chalusse, quil te chalusse, quil luy chalusse, quil nous

that ye, that they care.
chalusse, quil uous chalusse, quil leur chalusse.

Page 1007

PRETERIT PARFET.

With my wyll that I have , that thou hast , that he hath care: that we,
A ma uoullenté quil maie chalu, quil taie chalu, quil luy ayt chalu: quil nous,

that ye , that they have care.
quil uous, quil leur ayt chalu.

THE PRETERIT PLUS PARFET.

O if I had care, if thou hadest, if he had care: if we, if ye, if they
O sil me eust, sil teust, sil luy eust chalu: sil nous, sil uous, sil leur

had care.
eust chalu.

The futur is lyke the present as:

I praye to God that I care nat, or that I care.
Je prie a Dieu quil ne me chaille, ou quil me chaille.

The subjunctif is lyke the optatif.

Whan I shall care.

THE FUTURE: Mais quil me chaille, and so forth.

I shulde nat care, thou shuld nat care, he shuld nat care.

THE SECONDE FUTURE: Il ne me chauldroit, il ne te chauldroit, il ne luy chauldroit, etc.

It maketh no matter, or it skylleth nat.

THE INFINITIVE: Il ne peult chaloir.

Note that if ye leve this worde, *ne*, whiche is before every pronowne, it is affirmative, and if ye do put it unto the sayd pronowne it is negative.

Another conjugation of two verbes together, that is to say, *I serche* in englishe, and because I wyll eschewe prolixite, I wyll touche but the synguler nombre of every tense.

I seke, all one, thou , he : we serche,
Je cherche, je quiers, tu cherche, tu quiers, il cerche, il quiers: nous cerchons,

ye they
nous quierons, uous cerchés, uous quierés, ilz cherchent, ilz quierent.

PRETERIT IMPARFET.

I dyd seke, or serche.
Je cerchoie, ou querois.

I sauht.

THE PRETERIT PARFET. Je cerchay, ou quis.

Page 1008

I have sought.

THE PRETERIT INDIFFINITIF. Jay cherché, ou quis.

I had sought.

THE PRETERIT PLUS PARFET. Jauoie cherché, ou quis.

I shall serche.

THE FUTURE. Je cercheray, ou quereray.

Seke thou, or seke the, seke we,

THE IMPERATIVE. Cerche toy, ou quiers toy, querons nous, cerchons nous,

seke ye, seke they.
querés uous, cerches, quierent eulz, cherchent eulz.

Se that thou seke, that thou serche.

THE FUTURE. Garde que tu cerche, que tu quiere.

Loke that thou serche nat.

THE SECOND FUTUR. Garde que ne cerche, ou quiere.

With my wyll, that I serche or seke.

THE OPTATIF. A ma uoullenté, que je cerche ou quiere.

Wold to God that I dyd serche.

PRETERIT IMPARFET. Pleust a Dieu que je cerchasse, pleust a Dieu que je quisse.

With my wyll that I have sought.

THE PRETERIT PARFET. A ma uoullenté que jaie cherché ou quis.

O if I had sought, if thou had, if he had, etc.
THE PRETERIT PLUS PARFET. O se jeusse cerché ou quis, se tu eusse, sil eust, etc.

The subjunctif is lyke the optatif, with his thre preterites.

Whan I shall serche,
THE FYRST FUTURE. Mais que je cerche, ou quiere.

I shulde serche
THE SECONDE FUTURE. Je cercheroie, ou quereroie, quererois, roit: rions, riéz, roient.

To seke and to serche.
THE INFINITIF. Cercher et querir.

Note that this conjugation may be turned six and thirty maner wayes

I seke, seke I: why seke I: I seke nat,
after the fyrst sayenge: je cerche, cerche je: pourquoy cerche je: je ne cerche

seke nat I, why seke nat I.
pas, ne cerche je pas, pourquoy ne cerche je pas, etc. or elles an hondred and

I seke me, I
VIII wayes in one tense, sayeng after the II conjugation: je me quiers, je te

seke the, I seke him
quiers, je le quiers, and so forth, turninge it with the questions. (Loke upon
the seconde conjugation.)

Finis.

Page 1009

A conjugation of a verbe that must be pronounced with double *ll*, accordyng to the seventh rule that is immediatly after the prologue whiche shalbe a patron and example for all suche verbes, the which conjugation may be turned syx and thirty wayes after the fyrste, or an hundred and VIII after the seconde.

I knele, I blotte, I wyte, make foule,
The verbes ben je mengenoulle, je broulle, je toulle, je moulle, je soulle,

I stare I cut, I gyve, I gape,
je roulle, je catoulle, je fatroulle, je barboulle, je talle, je balle, je baslle,

I rayle.
je ralle, and suche lyke.

I knele, thou knele, he knele: we knele,
Je mengenoulle, tu tengenoulle, il sengenoulle: nous nous engenoullons,

you knele, they knele.
uous uous engenoullés, ilz sengenoullent.

THE PRETERIT IMPARFET.

I dyd knele, thou , he : we ,
Je mengenoullioie, tu tengenoulliois, il sengenoullioit: nous nous engenoullions,

you , they .
uous uous engenoulliez, ilz sengenoullioient.

THE PRETERIT PARFET.

I dyd knele, thou , he : we ,
Je mengenoullay, tu tengenoullas, il sengenoulla : nous nous engenoullames,

you , they .
uous uous engenoullates, ilz sengenoullarent.

PRETERIT INDIFFINITIF.

I have kneled, thou hast kneled, he hath : we have,
Je may engenoullé, tu tas engenoullé, il sa engenoullé: nous nous auons

engenoullé, you , they .
uous uous aues engenoullé, ilz se sont engenoullé.

THE PRETERIT PLUS PARFET.

I had kneled, thou , he : we ,
Je mauoie engenoullé, tu te auois engenoullé, il se auoit engenoullé: nous nous

auions engenoullés, you , they .
uous uous auiez engenoullé, ilz se auoient engenoullés.

Page 1010

THE FUTURE.

I shall knele, thou , he : we ,
Je mengenoullera, tu tengenoulleras, il sengenoullera: nous nous engenoullérons,

you , they .
uous uous engenoullérés, ilz sengenoullerront.

THIMPERATIF.

Knele thou or he, knele we, knele ye, let them knele.
Engenoullle toy ou soy, engenoullons nous, engenoullés uous, quilz sengenoullent.

BOTH FUTURS NEGATIF AND AFFIRMATIF.

Se that thou knele, that thou knele nat: that he knele, that he
Garde que tu tengenoullle, que tu ne tengenoullle pas: quil sengenoullle, quil ne

knele nat. That we knele, that we knele nat,
sengenoullle pas. Que nous nous engenoullons, que nous ne nous engenoullons pas,

that ye do knele, ye do nat knele. Do that they
que uous uous engenoullés, que uous ne uous engenoullés pas. Faictes quilz

knele, do that they knele nat.
sengenoullent, faictes quilz ne sengenoullent pas.

THE OPTATIF.

With my wyll, or I pray you that I may knele, that thou ,
A la mienne uoullenté, ou je uous prie que je mengenoullle, que tu tengenoullle,

he or she : that we , you ,
quil ou quelle sengenoullle: que nous nous engenoullons, que uous uous engenoulléz,

they .
quilz ou quelles sengenoullent.

THE PRETERIT IMPARFET.

Wold to God that I dyd knele, that , that:
Pleust a Dieu que mengenoullasse, que tu tengenoullasse, quil ou quelle sengenoullast:

that we , that ye , that
que nous engenoullissions, que uous uous engenoullissiéz, quilz ou

they .
quelles sengenoullassent.

THE PRETERIT PARFET.

That I have kneled, that thou , that he:
A ma uoullenté que maie engenoullé, que taie engenoullé, que laie engenoullé:

that we , that ye , that they .
que nous aions engenoullés, que uous aiés engenoullés, quilz se aient engenoullés.

Page 1011

THE PRETERIT PLUSPARFET.

O and I had kneled, if thou hadest , if he had :
O se je meusse engenoullé, se tu te eusse engenoullé, se il se eust engenoullé:

if we , if you , if they.
se nous nous eussions engenoullés, se uous uous eussés engenoullés, silz se
eussent engenoullés.

The subjunctif is lyke the optatif, saieng *come* or *quant* before the verbe.

THE FYRST FUTURE.

Whan I shall knele, thou , he : whan we ,
Mais que je mengenoullle, que tu tengenoullle, quil sengenoullle: mais que nous

whan ye , whan they .
nous engenoullons, que uous uous engenoullés, quilz sengenoullent.

THE SECONDE FUTURE.

I shuld knele, thou , he : we,
Je mengenoulleroie, tu tengenoullerois, il sengenoulleroit: nous nous engenoulleriens,

ye , they .
uous uous engenoulleriéz, ilz sengenoulleroient.

To knele. To have kneled. For
THE INFINITIF. Engenoullér. THE PRETERIT. Auoir engenoullé. THE GERUNDIF. Pour

to knele, in knelyng.
mengenoullér, de mengenoullér, en mengenoullant.

I wysshe the kneled.
THE OVERTHROWEN OF SUPIN. Je te souhaite engenoullé.

And lyke wyse of all the other verbes above rehersed.

Finis.

A conjugacion combinyng or joynyng two verbes togyder, that is to say *I am* and *I do*, takynge the present onely, in eschewyng prolyxite.

Whan I am at scole, I do my deuer to lerne my lesson.
Quant je suis a lescole, je fais mon debuoir daprendre ma lesson, ou lecon.

Whan thou art at scole, thou doest thy deuer to lerne thy lesson.
Quant tu es a lescole, tu fais ton debuoir daprendre ta lesson, ou lecon.

Whan he is at scole, he doeth his deuer to lerne his lesson.
Quant il est a lescole, il fait son debuoir daprendre sa lesson.

Page 1012

Whan we be at scole, we do our deuer to lerne our .
Quant nous sommes a lescolle, nous faisons nostre deuoir daprendre nostre lecon.

Whan ye be at scole, ye do your deuer to lerne your .
Quant uous estes a lescole, uous festes uostre deuoir daprendre uostre lesson.

Whan they be at scole, they do theyr deuer to lerne theyr .
Quant ilz sont a lescolle, ilz font leur deuoir daprendre leur lecon.

And so forth thorow al the conjugation of *I am*, above written, and of this verbe *I do*, whiche is in the preterit imparfet *je faisoie*.

I dyd.
PARFET. Je feis.

I have done.
THE PRETERIT INDIFINITIF. Jay fait.

I had done.
PLUS PARFET. Jauoie fait.

I shall do.
THE FUTURE. Je feray.

Do thou.
THE IMPERATIF. Faitz.

Loke that thou do.
THE FUTURE. Garde que tu face.

Let me do.
THE OPTATIF. Que je face.

Thad I dyd.
IMPARFET. Que je feisse.

That I have done.
THE PRETERIT PARFET. Que jaye faict.

That I had done.
PLUS PARFET. Que jeusse fait.

THE SUBJUNCTYF. Whan I shall do lyke the optatyf.

THE FIRST FUTURE. Mais que je face.

I shuld do,
THE SECONDE. Je feroye, rois, roit: ferions, riéz, roient.

To do.
THE INFINITIF. Faire.

To have done.
PRETERIT. Avoir fait.

Page 1013

In doynge, to do, for to do.
GERUNDIF. En faisant, a faire, pour faire.

THE OVERTHROWEN. To be done.
LE RENUERSE. Estre fait.

Note that for to lerne frenche quickly, ye must turne the sayd conjugation iii maners of wayes, tat is to say affirmatyve, and interrogatyve, and negatyve, and interrogatyve, as it hath ben plainly shewed here before.

Finis.

Another conjugation by way of combination lyke the tother before rehersed. And fyrst of the present.

Whan I repute me vile and unclene, by humilite, I am clene and pure
Quant je me repute uil et ord, uile et orde, par humilité, je suis nect et pur, necte et
by goodnes.
pure, par bonté.

Whan thou repute the, by goodnes, thou art
Quant tu te repute uil et ord, uile et orde, par bonté, tu es nect et pur, necte et pure,
par humilité.

Whan he him repute, he is
Quant il se repute uil et ord, uile et orde, par bonté, il est pur et nect, pure et necte,
par humilité.

Whan we us repute, we be
Quant nous nous reputons uilz et ordz, uiles et ordes, par humilité, nous sommes purs
et nectz par bonté.

Whan ye you repute, ye be
Quant uous uous reputez uilz et ordz, uiles et ordes, par humilité, uous estes purs et
nectz, etc. par bonté.

Whan they them repute, by mekenes, they
Quant ilz ou elles se reputent uilz et ordz, uiles et ordes, par humilité, ilz ou elles sont
purs et nectz, pures et nectes, par bonté.

And so forth unto the imperatif, makynge other verbes by patron of the same.

Also another conjugation with two verbes togeder every of them twyse rehersed, and the verbe repeted ever in the preterit parfet, and the fyrst and last goynge through all the modes and tenses: the whiche ben thus. *Whan I se that I never saw, I thinke that I never thought.*

Whan I se that whiche I never saw, I thinke that I never thought. Quant je uoy ce que ne ueis jamais, je pense ce que ne pensay oncques.

Page 1014

Whan thou seest that that thou, thou
Quant tu uois ce que tu ne ueis jamais, tu pense ce que ne pensas oncques.

Whan he seth, he thinke that
Quant il uoit ce quil ne ueist jamais, il pense ce quil ne pensa oncques.

Whan we se that that we, we
Quant nous uoions ce que nous ne ueismes jamais, nous pensons ce que ne pensames
oncques.

Whan ye se that that ye never sawe, ye
Quant uous uoyez ce que ne ueistes jamais, uous pensés ce que ne pensastes oncques.

Whan they se, they
Quant ilz uoient ce quilz ne ueisent jamais, ilz pensent ce que ne penserent oncques.

And so through till the imperatif, than ye may turne the verbes if ye lyst, sayeng: «Whan I thinke that I never thought, I se that I never sawe; *Quant je pense ce que ne pensay jamais, je uoy ce que ne ueis oncques,*» and so forth.

Another conjugation joynynge two verbes together.

Whan I am ydell, I worke nat: whan I worke, I am nat ydell.
Quant je chomme, je ne besongne pas: quant je besongne, je ne chomme pas.

Whan thou art ydell, thou workest nat: whan thou workest, thou art nat ydell.
Quant tu chomme, tu ne besongne pas: quant tu besongne, tu ne chomme pas.

Whan he or she is ydell, he or she worketh nat: whan he or she doeth worke, he or
Quant il ou elle chome, il ou elle ne besongne pas: quand il ou elle besongne, il ou

she is nat ydell.
elle ne chomme pas.

Whan we be ydel, we do nat worke: whan we worke, we be
Quant nous chomons, nous ne besongnons pas: quant nous besongnons, nous ne
nat ydel.
chomons pas.

Whan ye be ydel, ye worke nat: whan ye worked, ye be nat
Quant uous chommés, uous ne besongnés pas: quant uous besongnés, uous ne chomés
ydel.
pas.

Whan they ben ydel, they worke nat: whan they worke,
Quant ilz ou elles chomment, ilz ou elles ne besongnent pas: quant ilz ou elles besongnent,
they be nat ydel.
ilz ou elles ne chomment pas.

I was ydel,
And so forth till the imperatif, saieng in the preterit imparfet: *chomoie,*

Page 1015

I dyd worke. I was ydel whan I
besongnoie, etc.; in the parfet: chommay, besongnay; the indifinitif: quant jay

had ben ydel, I had nat worked. whan I had ben ydel, I had nat
chommé, je nay pas besongné; the plus parfet: *quant jauoie chomé, je nauoie*

worked. whan I shalbe ydel, I shall nat worke.
pas besongné; the future: *quant je chommeray, je ne besongneray pas.*

Another conjugation accordynge to the precedent.

Whan I am possessed, I have good earnes: whan I have non earnes, I am nat
Quant je suis nantis ou nantie, jay bonnes arres: quant je nay nulles arres, je ne suis
possessed.
point nantie.

Whan thou art possessed, thou hast good earnes: whan thou hast non earnes, thou art nat
Quant tu es nantis, tu as bonnes arres: quant tu nas nulles arres, tu nes point
possessed.
nantis.

Whan he hath good earnes, he is : whan he is nat possessed, he hath none earnes.
Quant il a bonnes arres, il est nantis: quant il nest point nantis, il na nulles arres.

Whan we be possessed, we have good earnes: whan we have good earnes,
Quant nous sommes nantis, nous auons bonnes arres: quant nous auons bonnes arres,
we be possessed.
nous sommes nantis.

Whan ye be, ye have good : whan ye have, ye
Quant uous estes nantis, uous aues bonnes arres: quant uous aues bonnes arres, uous
be.
estes nantis.

Whan they be, they have : whan they have, they be.
Quant ilz sont nantis, ilz ont bonnes arres: quant ilz ont bonnes arres, ilz sont nantis.

and so forth after the verbe, *je suis*, sayeng in the preterit imparfet,

whan I was
quant j'estois, etc. (Loke above.)

I understande, thou understande, he or she understandeth, we us understande,
Jentens, je mentens: tu entens, tu tentens: il ou elle sentend: nous nous entendons,

ye understande you, they understande.
uous uous entendes, ilz ou elles sentendent.

THE INTERROGATYVE.

Understand I me, understande thou, understande he or she: understande we us,
Mentens je, tentens tu, sentend il ou elle: nous entendons nous,

understande ye you, understande they them.
uous entendes uous, sentendent ilz ou elles.

Page 1016

THE NEGATYVE.

I understande nat me, thou understande nat the, he or she understande nat him; we do
Je ne mentens pas, tu ne tentens pas, il ou elle ne sentend pas: nous ne

nat understande us, ye do nat understande you, they do nat understande them.
nous entendons pas, uous ne uous entendés pas, ilz ou elles ne sentendent pas.

THE INTERROGATYVE.

Do nat I understande me, do nat thou understande the, do nat he understande him or she:
Ne mentens je pas, ne tentens tu pas, ne sentend il ou elle pas:

do we nat understande us, do ye nat understande ye, do nat they understande
ne nous entendons nous pas, ne uous entendes uous pas, ne sentendent ilz

them.
ou elles pas.

Dyd I understande, understande I, I have understande, I had understande, I shall understande.
entendoie, entendis, jay entendu, jauoie entendu, entenderay.

Thus endeth the fyrst boke.

Page 1017

An answer to the correcters and of all workes reprobours.
APOLOGIE AUX CORRECTEURS ET DE TOUTTES OUURES REPREUEURS.

GILES DU WES ALIAS DE VADIS.

G Grose folke of rude affection
rosses gens de rudes affections

I dronkerdes, banysshed of trewe felyng
urongnes, bannis de uray sentement

L lubbers, knaves, private of understandyng
ourdaultz, cocardz, priues dentendement

E in their mouthfull takyng refection
n leur gueulée prenant refectiions

S fulfilled of oprobre and of detraction
aoule doprobes et de detractiions

D Shall say of me as they do of other folkes
irott de moy comme ilz font daultre gent

U beholde here, what a maker fayre and gentyll
oies icy, quel facteur bel et gent,

U trewe it is for certayne, that I am ignorant
ray est pour certain, que suis ignorant

U wyllyng I ought nat to leave therfore
oullloir je ne doy pas laisser pour tant

E to undertake thyng that ought to be prayse
 mprendre chose qui fait a priser

 S without takyng hede to their disprayse.
 ans garde prendre a leur despriser.

 A Some shall say this is yvell writte
 ulcun diront cecy est mal escript

 L the others aftervarde, bendyng the browes
 es aultres appres, bandant lez sourcilz

 I shall there fynde right great faute of spirite
 trouueront tresgrant faulte desprist

 A other shall wey all, as folkes subtyles
 ultres peseront tout, comme gens subtilz.

 S upon this gyveng their sentence and advyse.
 ur ce donnant leur sentence et aduis.

 D Say every one what so ever he wyll
 ie ung chescun ce que dire uouldra

 E in the spite of the dyvell, and of yvel wyll.
 n despit du diable, et de mal uoulloir.

 U Se they may, that I have put me in dever
 eoir ilz pouront, que ma mis en debuoir

 A to do well, do better that can
 bien faire, face mieulz qui scara

 D of me certes nat reproved he shalbe.
 e moy certes ja reprins nen sera.

 I Jesus than us graunt well to do
 hesus doncques nous ottroy bien faire

 S without willyng, neither him nor other displease.
 ans uoulloir, na lui na aultre desplaire.

ENDE OF THE FYRST BOKE.

Page 1018

HERE FOLOWETH THE SECONDE BOOKE
 of this lytell worke, in the whiche
 shalbe treated of comunyca-
 tions, and other thynges
 necessary to the lernyn
 of the sayd French
 tonge.

Page 1019

A LAUDE AND PRAYSE
 TO THE KYNGE, THE QUENE, AND TO THE PRINCESSE
 NOBLE GRACE, FOR A PREAMBLE OR
 PROLOGUE TO THE SAYD
 BOKE.

To the right hye, right christen, and most redouted imperiall myght, and
 A la treshaulte, trescrestien, et tresredoutée imperiale puissance, et

soverayne majesty of you, Henry by the grace of God, lyveng kyng victorious,
 souveraine maiste de uous, Henry par la grace de Dieu, uuant roy uictorieux,

and monarcion of all Englande, the VIII of that name: be
 et monarque de toute Engleterre, huitiesme de ce nom: soit

laude everlastyng, honour without ende: alwayes lastyng lyfe prosperous
 louenge perpetuelle, honneur sans fin: tousjours durant uie prospere

and good felicite.
 et bien heurée.

And to you most illustre, right excellente, and right magnanime lady and

Et a uous tresillustre, tresexcellente, et tresmagnanime dame et

princesse, my lady Anne by the grace of God quene of Englande and of
princesse, ma dame Anne par la grace de Dieu royne dEngleterre et de

France: with right noble and most vertuose yours right dere and well beloved
Fraunce: avec tres noble et tres uertueuse uostre tres chiére et bien aimée

doughter Elizabeth, princesse of Englande and of Wales: be lyfe everlastyng
fille Elizabeth, princesse dEngleterre et de Galles: soit uie pardurable

and joye without ende. Amen amen.
et joye sans fin. Amen amen.

Ee dicat omnis populus amen.

Page 1020

Wolde to God A ma uoullenté	by his faire dedes par ses beaulz faitz
that the Godheed que la deité,	hath over comen a surmontés
full of goodnesse plaine de bonté	and excelled et excellés
had graunted to me sy meust ottoié	wherfore the most pourquoy le plus
whiche am counterfait qui suis contrefait	parfait here beneth parfait ca jus
of ignorancy, and undone dignorance, et desfait	having power ayant pouoir
koning and knowledge science et scauoir	and the knowyng et le scauoir
with the power avecques pouoir	shulde fayle right well il fauldroit bien
can declare scavoir declarér	that his mainteynyng que son maintien
and to manyfeste et manifestér	that his sperit que son esprit
after my power selon mon possible	of wyt kyndled de sens esprit
the grace that can nat be saide la grace indicible	might ones begyne peult entamér
of the right christen kyng du trescrestien roy	for to declare pour declarér
whiche in noble aray qui en noble aroy	as it hapened comme il aduient
is this day lyvyng est aujourdhuy uiuant	whan a man doth come quant homme uient
prosperous and reinyng prospereus et regnant	to the great see a la graunt mér
whiche all the men qui tous les hommes	for to lade it pour lespuisér
howe great that we ben come grans que sommes	incontinently incontinent
as well clerkes and lays et clercz et laiz	that he doth se quil uoit comment

Page 1021

his entreprise son entreprise	the whiche to parforme ce que parfaire
----------------------------------	---

whiche to that him tychyt
que ce latise

hath made him do amysse
la fait mesprendre

willyng to take in hande
uolloir entreprendre

a thinge impossible
chose impossible

he that right feble
luy qui debile

is, and fraile
est, et fragile

and lytell able
et peu abille

as a man dronke
comme ung homme yvre

whiche lytell to lyve
quy guere uiura

naturally
naturellement

may nat goodly
ne peult bonnement

he him withdraweth
il se retire

pluckyng him selfe
et se detire

him complainyng
soy doulousant

that nat knowyng
que non scauaunt

he hath undertake
il a empris

to wyn the prise
gagner le pris

wyllyng for to do
pour uolloir faire

no man might
nul ne pouloit

where he nover
tant ne seroit

man so myghty
home puissant

alwaies livyng
tousjours uiuaunt

neither more nor lesse
ne plus ne moins

to put his handes
mectre ses mains

or besy him selfe
ou sempescher

wyllyng to prayse
uolloir prisér

prince without pere
prince sans pér

and nat to erre
sans point errér

shuld be to lade
seroit puisser

the water out of the se
leau hors la mér

wherfore in now
pourquoy a tant

me withdrawyng
me retirant

of myn enterpryse
de mon emprise

I say without fiction
dis sans faintise

during my lyfe.
durant ma uye.

Be it sadde or mery
Soit triste ou lye

Page 1022

I shall never cease
ne cesseray

nor shall leave
ne laysseray

in every place
en chascun lieu

to laude God
de louer Dieu

and also to crie
et de criér

and to supply
et supplier

his magestie
sa magesté

and godheed
et deité

to be wyllyng to kepe

that hath no pere
qui non pareille

in this worlde
est en ce monde

right pure and clene
trespure et monde

it is the princesse
cest la princesse

halfe a goddesse
demie deesse

leavyng them to us
les nous laissans

here lyvyng
icy uiuans

right longe space
tres longue espace

with his grace

uolloir gardér

avec sa grace

and to preserve
et preseruér

than whan shall come
puis quand uindra

the noble lorde
le noble seigneur

that it shall nede
quil conuindra

from all unhap
de tout malheur

at the later ende
a la parfin

also the lady
aussi la dame

that they take an ende
quilz prengnent fin

whiche lyved without blame
que uist sans blame

without bytternesse
sans amertune

I understande the quene
jentens la royne

or payne any
ne paine aulcune

whiche never doth ende
qui point ne fine

they be sette
ilz soient posés

to do honour
de faire honneur

and bestowed
et colocqués

to the maker
au createur

in Heven
en Paradis

with she
auec[que] celle

where as ever
la ou toudis

Page 1023

they may laude
puissent louér

the blessed Trinite
la benoite Trinité

and exalte
et exaltér

thre persones in unite
trois personnes en unité

with the saintes
auec les saintz

the whiche for ever without decline
laquelle a jamais sans declin

wherof there is many
dont y a maintz

reigne alwayes without ende.
regne a tousjours sans prendre fin.

Finis.

A MESSENGER COMMING

FROM THE KYNGES GRACE, TO HIS WEL BELOVED DOUGHTER LADY MARY.

Mary.

From wens come you, my frende.
Dou uenes uous, mon amy.

The messenger.

I come from the court.
Certes, madame, je uiens de la court.

Mary.

How doth fare the Kyng my father and the good lady my mother.
Coment se porte le Roy mon pere et la bonne dame ma mere.

The messenger.

In truthe, madame, they dyd right well at my partyng, or whan
En uerité, madame, ilz se portoient tresbien a mon departement, ou quant

I came thens.
je men partis.

Ma.

I am right glad of their good prosperite, and pray Our Lorde always so
Je suis tresjoieuse de leur bonne prosperité, et prie Nostre Seigneur tousjours

to maintene them: do nat you bryng me some remembraunce or token
ainsy les maintenir: ne maportés uous quelque souuenance ou enseigne

from them.
de par eulz.

Le mes.

I do presente unto you, in the name of the good grace of the Kyng your father, this
Je uous presente, ou nom de la bonne grace du roy uostre pere, ce

herte of golde, amelde of trewe hope, whiche is russet couller, and from
ceur dor, esmaillé de uray esperance, qui est coulleur grise, et de par

Page 1024

the good lady your mother, a flour of forget me nat, with the
la bonne dame uostre mère, une fleur de ne moubliez mye, avec la

blessyng of God, gyven to Jacob.
benediction de Dieu donnée a Jacob.

Mary.

What blessyng do ye speke to me of.
Quelle benediction me mectés uous en termes.

Le mes.

The same that Abraham gave to Isaak, and Isaak to Jacob, and Jacob to Judas,
Celle que Abraham donna a Isaak, et Isaak a Jacob, et Jacob a Judas,

the whiche is suche that all they that shall blesse you, shalbe blessed.
laquelle est telle que tous ceulx qui uous benyront seront benyes.

Ma.

Blessed be God and blessed be the Kyng and the Quine and all creatures
Benoit soit Dieu et benoitz soient le Roy et la Royne et toutes creatures

of good wyll: now tell me what newes bringe ye to me.
de bonne uoullenté: orsus die moy quelles nouvelles maportés uous.

Le mes.

Trewly ma dame, I do know none other thyng that I may say openly,
Ueritablement, ma dame, je ne scay aultre chose que puisse dire en appert,

but that the Kyng is a knyght.
sinon que le Roy est cheuallier.

Ma.

For soth, or in my God: ther be fayre tidynges, ye may go whan
En mon Dieu, vas les belles nouvelles, uous uous poués en allér

shall please you.
quant uous playra.

Le mes.

Wherfore madame.
Pourquoy, madame.

Ma.

Because that ye have done your arande.
Pource que fait aués uostre message.

I pray you how do myne uncle, myne ante, my lorde,
Je uous prie comment se porte, se portent mon oncle, ma tante, monsieur,

my lady, my my
madame, maistre, maistresse; mon cousin, mes cousins, ma cousine,

neigh bour, my
mes cousines, mon uoisin, mes uoisins, ma uoisine, mes uoisines, mon

God father, my God mother, gospy,
parin, ma marine, mon compère, ma commère, maistre, maistresse,

Page 1025

women, the men: and all my
les damoiselles, les gentilz femmes, les gentilz hommes: et tous mes

good fryndes.
bons amis.

Le mes.

He or she they an hondred times,
Il ou elle se recommande, ilz ou elles se recommandent cent fois,

a thousand times, to your good grace, to your highnesse, to your excellency,
mille fois, a uostre bonne grace, a uostre haultesse, a uostre excellence,

to your lordshyppe.
a uostre seigneurie.

Ma.

I am glad, that he do well, that she that
Je suis joieus, je suis joieuse, quil se porte bien, quelle le fait bien, quilz

they do.
le font bien, quelles se portent bien.

Whan shall ye retourne, whan pretende you or purpose ye to
Quant retournerés uous, quant pretendés uous, quant proposés uous de

returne toward the court, toward the Kyng, the Quene, my lorde,
retourner deuers la court, deuers le Roy, deuers la Royne, devers monsieur,

my lady.
devers madame, etc.

Le mes.

Certainly to morow, after to morow, within this two dayes, within
Certainement, madame, demain, apres demain, dicy a deux jours, dicy a

viii daies, within this moneth: will it please you to commande me any
huit jours, dicy a ung mois: uous plaist il me commander aulcun

servyce.
seruyce.

Ma.

I you pray to do my most humble recommendations to the good grace
Je uous prie de fayre mes tres humbles recommandations à la bonne grace

of the Kyng my father, and the good lady my mother, and to saye to them
du Roy mon pere, a la bonne dame ma mere, et leur dire

that I them pray alwayes of their blessinges.
que je les prie tousjours de leurs benedictions.

Page 1026

**MONICION TO THE LADY MARY, BY THE LADY OF MAL
TRAUERS, HUMBLE SERVANT TO HER NOBLE GRACE,
UPON A PROVERBE WHICHE IS HERYNG
SAY GOTH BY THE TOWNE.**

I you have herde say
Madame, je uous ay ouy dire

that by the towne gothe here say
que par uille ua ouyr dire

wherfore I you say, and for trouth
pourquoy je uous dis, et pour uray

that if ye ne do other dever
que sy ne faictes aultre debvoir

ye shall fynd that one hath missaide

uous trouuerés quon a mesdict
in that which of you one hath saide
en ce que de uous on a dit
that you dyd speke ryght good frenche
que uous parliéz tresbon francois
passed allredy more than six monethes
passes desja plus de six mois
wherfore, for the love that I you owe
pourquoy pour lamour que uous doy
and that to you have gyve my fayth
et que uous ay donné ma foy
I you requyre and monishe
je uous requier et admoneste
as she whiche is redy
comme celle qui est preste
to serve you and worshyppe
de uous seruir et honorer
that it please you to remember
quil uous plaise rememorer

Page 1027

that whiche more touche your honour
ce qui plus touche uostre honeur
for if it dyd please our lorde
car sil plaisoit nostre seigneur
that you might ones come to
que uous peussiez ja paruenir
where your hert hath his desire
ou uostre coeur a son desir
without knowyng the frenche speche
sans sauoir parler francois
ye shulde be forced to take by election
il uous faudroie prendre par chois
a faire lady and mynyon
une belle dame et mignonne
for to assiste your persone
pour assistér uostre personne
and also for to interprete
et aussy pour interpreter
that whiche it shulde please you to declare
ce quil uous plairoit déclarér
to your husbande and lorde,
a uostre mary et seigneur,
were he either kyng or emperour,
fust il ou roy ou empereur,
whiche might be occasyon
qui pouloit estre occasyon
to gyve you suspicion
de uous donner suspicion
puttyng you in jalousye
uous mectant en jalousie
wherfore howe be it that I am nat
pourquoy combien que ne soie mye
wise ynough nor discrete
asses sage ne discrète

Page 1028

for of you to be secrete
pour de uous estre secrète

faithfulnes nevertheles bynde me
loiaulté neantmoins me lie

the whiche humbly supplye
le quel humblement supplie

to your hygh excellency
a uostre haulte excellence

to do dever and delygence
de faire debuoir et diligence

to lern of all your power
daprendre de tout uostre pouoir

to the ende that ye may can
affin que uous puissés scauoir

at the commyng of your father
a la uenue de uostre père

speke frenche in suche wyse
parler francois de telle manière

that Jesu be therof worshypped
que Jesu en soit honoré

and the noble Kyng contented
et le noble Roy contenté

and that it tourne you to honour
et quil uous tourne a honeur

and in proffit to the servant
et a prouffit au seruiteur

whiche for to serve your grace
qui pour seruir uostre grace

nothyng is possyble that he ne do
nest rien possible quil ne face

the whiche God be wylling to kepe
laquelle Dieu ueulle gardér

and in suche wyse to enlumine
et tellement enluminér

Page 1029

that you may have at the later ende
que uous puissés auoir en fin

the joy that last without ende.
la joie qui dure sans fin.

Amen.

A MESSANGER COMMING FROM THEMPEROUR, THE FRENCH KYNG, OR ANY OTHER PRYNCE.

The mes. God save you good life and honour gyve you God.
Dieu uous sauue, madame, bonne uie et honneur uous doint Dieu, madame.

Mary. Ye be welcome my frende, my lorde.
Bien soiez uenu, mon amy, mamie, monsieur.

The mes. The empereur your cosin recomende to your good grace, to your
Lempereur uostre cousin se recomande a uostre bonne grace, a uostre

or the Kyng my maistre or your father grete you well.
celsitude, ou majesté, le Roy mon maistre ou uostre père uous salue.

Ma. How doth his good grace, his lordshyp.
Comment le fait sa bonne grace, sa seigneurie.

he doth as the prince of this worlde, that most desyre

Le mes. Certes, madame, il se porte come le prince de ce monde qui plus desire
your welth, your honour, and for the maintenyng of the whiche he wolde
uostre bien, uostre honeur, et pour le maintenement du quel il uouldroit
bestow body and richesse, or richesse.
emploier corps et auoir, ou cheuance.

Ma. I thanke him hertely, for I do holde him for suche, and
Certes je le mercie de tresbon coeur, car je le tiens pour tél, et
I do certifye you that of my parte I wolde do lykewyse
uous certifye que de ma parte je uouldroie fayre le pareil, le semblable
for him. Now rise up I shall beholde your letters, than I shall
pour luy. Or sus levés uous, je regarderay uos lettres, puis je uous
gyve you an answeare.
donerai responsse.

Page 1030

At your good pleasure. Wyll it please your grace, your highnesse,
Le mes. A uostre bon playsir, madame. Plaist il a uostre grace, a uostre haultesse,
to comande me any servyce to the of your cosin the Emperour,
me comandér aulcun service a la majesté de uostre cousin lempereur,
or of the Kyng my maistre.
ou du Roy mon maistre.

Ma. I praye you to recomende me to his majestie, as she that is glad
Je uous prie de me recomandér a sa majesté, come celle qui seroit joieuse
of his welth, honour and prosperite. And for the which or to encrease
de son bien, honneur et prosperité. Et pour laquelle ou lequel encoistre
I wolde do my power.
je uouldroie faire mon pouoir.

I shall fulfyll your commandement with the helpe of God, madame.
Le mes. Jacomplyray uostre commandement a laide de Dieu, madame.

Ma. I pray you therof my frende: and fare well.
Je uous en prie, mon amy, et a Dieu soiez, etc.

A PRESENT SENDE TO THE LADY MARY.

God save you or preserve you from evyl and mishap
Le mes. Dieu uous garde ou preserue de mal et dencombrier, ma dame.

Ye be right well come, my gentyلمان.
Mary. Vous soiez le tresbien uenu, mom gentilhomme.

My lorde of Worcestre and my lady his wyfe recomende them
Le mes. Monsieur de Worcestre et ma dame sa femme se recomandent

humbly, mekely, to your good grace, and doth send you this lytell present
humblement a uostre bonne grace, et uous enuoient ce petit present

of suche comodities that it hath pleased Our Lorde to send them.
de telles comodités quil a pleu Nostre Seigneur leur envoier.

Ma. Forsoth I thanke them hertely: it is nat the fyrst
En bonne uerité je les mercye de bonne amour: ce nest pas la première
goodnesse and courtesy that they have done to me: how doth he,
bonté et courtoisie quilz mont faicte: comment se porte il,
I pray you, and how doth the good lady his wyfe.
je uous prie, et comment le fait la bonne dame sa femme.

Page 1031

Certainly, madame, they do, or they fare, as they that ben
Le mes. Certainement, madam, ilz se portent, or ilz le font come ceulz qui sont

all yours.
tous uostres.

Ma. Forsoth I am glad therof, for he is a noble lorde,
En mon Dieu, jen suis bien joieuse, car il est noble personne, seigneur,

man: and she is a good, and vertuose lady, trewe,
homme: et elle est bonne et uertueuse dame, honeste, preude, gentille

lady, woman, I pray you
dame, damoisel, femme de bien, je uous prie ou requier de

to thanke her, to thanke them, and to them say that I
me la remercier, de me les regraciér, et leur ou luy dictes que je

shalbe glade, to remembre the honour that he they
seray joieuz, joieuse de recognoistre lhonneur quil ou quelle, quilz ou

do to me when oportunité or tyme shalbe.
quelles me fait ou font quant temps oportun ou oportunité en sera.

I shall endeuer me with all my power to fulfyll your comandement, madame.
Le mes. Je menploiray de tout mon pouer a accomplir uostre commandement, madame.

Tresourer.
Ma. Tresoriér.

Madame.
Le tres. Madame.

Gyve him fifty crownes.
Mar. Dones luy cinquante escus.

It shalbe done, madame.
Le tres. Il sera fait, madame.

Hussher.
Mar. Hussher.

What please your grace.
Lhus. Que plait il a uostre grace.

Go and brynge this gentilman to the seller and make him good chere, and
Ma. Allés et menés ce gentil homme au celiér et luy faictes bonne chiére, et

loke that he lake no thinge.
regardés que riens ne luy faille.

Page 1032

I shall fulfyll your pleasure, madame.
Lhus. Jaccompliray uostre plaisir, madame.

**AN EPITAPHE MADE UPON THE DETH OF FRENCHÉ, WHICHE
WAS FAYNED FOR TO TECHE HER GRACE, HER MAISTRE
BEYNGE SYKE OF THE GOWTE.**

Here lyeth the frenche ouerthrowen
Cy gist le francois renuersé

as ye se and cast downe
come uous uoiéz et abatu

the whiche is more than a yere a gone
lequel plus dung an a passé

that he came among us;
quauec nous sest embatu;

wold to God that he had lyved
pleust ore a Dieu quil eust uescu

reignyng alwayes as he was wont
regnant tousjours come il souloit

sith that no man he wolde none yvell
ueu qua nulluy mal ne uoulloit

Alas, at his begynnyng
Helas, a son commencement

he was so right well accepted
il fust sy tresbien accepté

of his lady and of her people,
de sa dame et de sa gent,

but at the ende dere it hath coste
mais en la fin chiere a cousté

for he hath ben slayne
car il a esté assomme

and cast downe by stronge warre
et rues jus par forte guerre

and now lyeth deed in the grounde
et maintenant gist mort en terre

Page 1033

In dyeng made his complainte
En se mourant fist sa complainte

against thre man of this house
contre trois hommes de ceans

wherof one of them hath deceived many
dont lung diceulz a diceu maintes

as ben customed all phisiciens
come seulent tous phisiciens

for I have herde say to the ancientes
car jay ouy dire aux anciens

that with our peril they lerne,
qua nos perilz font discipline,

that which may be proved by Plyny.
ce qui se peult prouuer par Pline.

The other whiche was his enemy
Laultre qui fust son ennemy

is called maistre amener,
sapelle monsieur laumosnier,

whiche at the fyrst to him was lovyng
qui au premier luy fust amy

cherisshyng him as a frynde dere,
le festoiant come amy chiér,

but at the ende of a hert of stele
mais en la fin dung coeur daciér

him renouncyng put him in oblivion,
le renoncant mist en oubly,

wherof he died for great thought.
dont il mourust par grant soucy.

The thirde that best him dyd mainten
Le tiers qui mieulz le maintenoit

had it nat ben for his absence
se neust este pour son absence

Page 1034

one him dyd name
Jehan ap Morgan on le nonmoit

the whiche hath him put in forgetyng,
lequel la mis en non chalance,

for howbeit that great knowyng
car combien que grant science

to him mainteyn he had nat,
a le soubstenir point nauoit,

by him nevertheles over al he dyde lyve.
par luy neantmoins sur tous uiuoit.

But sith that it is so hapned,
Mais puis quainsy est aduenu,

it must be take paciently

prendre le fault paciamment
prayeng for him and his salvation
prianr pour luy et son salu
sens that it may nat be otherwyse.
ueu questre ne peult aultrement.
that it please to God almyghty
quil please a Dieu omnipotent
of him and us to have mercy
de luy et nous auoir mercy
whan by the deth we shalbe passed.
quant par la mort serons transy.

Amen.

**A LETTER SENDE TO THE LADY MARY FOR TO LERNE
THE SAME, IN THE ABSENCE OF HER SERVANTE
WHICHE DYD TECHE HER GRACE.**

To my lady, my lady Mary of Englande, doughter of the most cristen Kyng,
Madame, madame Marye dEngleterre, fille du roy trescrestien,

Page 1035

my most redoubted lady and mastresse, gretyng with renowne immortal.
ma tresredoubtée dame et maistresse, salut avec renommée immortelle.

Consideryng that here before I have advertysed you, most
Considerant que deuant ores, ou par ca deuant uous ay aduerty, tres

illustre and right excellent lady, how we have the deth before us,
illustre et tres excellente dame, coment nous auons la mort deuant nous,

to the whiche by the wyll of God we haste us of all our strength
a la quelle par le uouloir diuin nous nous hastons de toutes nos forces

to come. The whiche in my memory revolving about my partyng,
parvenir. Ce quen ma memoire reuoluant environ mon parterment,

nat knowyng if I shall have grace to retourne in your servyce or no:
ignorant se jaray grace de retourner en uostre seruyce ou non:

have advised me of herte trewe and contrit in all mekenesse to requyre
me suis aduisé de coeur loyall et contrit en toute humilité uous requerir

you forgyvenes and pardon of the rudenesse that I yvel manerd have used toward
mercy et pardon de la rudesse que (je mal morigère) ay usé enuers

your hyghnesse, administryng you my pore and unworthy servyce,
uostre haultesse, uous administrant mon poure et indigne seruyce,

supplyeng you humbly that specially for the love of him
uous supliant humblement quesipeciallement pour lamour de celluy

please you to pardone me, for the whiche willyng to serve, I have right often passed
me ueulles pardonner, pour lequel uouloir seruir jay souuent transgressé

the markes and lymytes of reason, having confidence assuredly that the syngular
les limites et bournes de raison, me confiant assurement que la singuliere

mekenes of your excellency, joined with the fullyng of all other
benignité de uostre excellence conjointe avec le comble de toutes aultres

graces shall nat rejecte nor refuse this my lyttell request, and for a token
graces ne rejectera ne refusera ceste ma petite requeste, et pour signe

of the graunt of the same, shal please you benignely to rede and understande this
de lotroy dicelle uous plaira benignement lire et entendre ceste

rude and unworthy letters, the whiche (as I hope) shall nat do you lytell
rude et indigne lettres, la quelle (come jespoir) ne uous sera point petit

proffit with that that by this meane ye shall restore and excuse myn
de prouffit avec ce que par ce moien uous suplérés et excuserés mon

Page 1036

absence, prayeng our Lorde thus most hye, most illustre, and most
absence, priant nostre Seigneur a tant tres haulte, tres illustre, et tres

excellente lady, to gyve you rest pleasant and slepe delicat.
excellente dame, uous donner repos plaisant et sompne delicieuz. Amen.

Written by your unworthy servant the nyght that he toke leve of your
Escrypt par uostre indigne seruiteur la nuyt que prins congie de uostre

grace.
grace.

**ANOTHER LETTER SENDE TO THE LADY MARY
BY JOHN AP MORGAN SQUIER, CARVER
OF THE SAME, HER GRACE BEYNG
SOMWHAT CRASED.**

To the right hygh, right excellente and right magnanyme my right redouted
A tres haulte, tres excellente et tres magnanime ma tres redoubté

lady my lady Mary of Englande, my lady and mastresse, grettyng with joye
dame ma dame Marye dEngleterre, madame et maistresse, salut avec joye

everlastyng.
sans fin.

The tribulations of this worlde most grevous and most intollerable to
Les tribulations de ce monde plus angoisseuses et plus intollerables a

bere and suffre, right illustre and prosperous lady, ben whan a
comporter et souffrir, tres illustre et bien heurée dame, sont quant une

body desiryng to satisfie and to obtemperate to his pleasur and affection is
persone desirant de satisfaire et obtemperer a son plaisir et affection est

contrained by strength and inforced to the contrary, wherof I may of my
contrainte par uieue force et efforcée au contraire, de quoy je puis de ma

part bere trew witnesse, for of the one side I am holde and bounde after
part porter uray tiesmoynage, car dung coste je suis tenu et obligé selon

the lawe divyne to entertaine my wyfe and espouse, nat onely of the lytell
la loy diuine dentretenir ma femme et espouse, non seulement des petis

goodes temporals that it hath pleased to God to sende me, but also of my
biens temporéls quil a pleu a Dieu menuoyer, mais aussy de mon

Page 1037

owne body in all her necessities and busenes, to ayde and lene unto: with
corps mesme en toutes ses negoces et affaires, suffultér et assistér: avec

that that of the other part your excellency, to the whiche I am bounde by nature
ce que daultre part uostre excellence, a laquelle je suis obligé par nature

and by othe, doth styre and move me continually to desyre the of
et par serment me instique et esmeult incessamment desirer la fruicion de

your presence for the more and more to consider and beholde the indicible
uostre presence pour de plus en plus ruminér et speculér les inconprehensibles

vertues, of the whiche our Lorde of his grace infinit hath
uertus, desquelles nostre Seigneur de sa grace immense uous

you above all other ladyes of this worlde, as the sone above
a pardessus toutes aultres dames de ce monde, come le soleill par dessus

all the sterres of Heven made to shine and glistre: but sens that none
toutes les estoilles du ciel fait luire et resplendir: mais ueu que nul

may to the Creatour satisfy without kepyng the faith promised, I have suche
ne peult au Createur satisfayre sans garder la foy promise, jay tél

hope and trust in your hygh that this mekely
espoir et confidence en uostre haulte circonspeccion, que ce bénignement

considred, shall holde me in myne absence for excused: certifyeng you
consydéré, me tiendra en mon absence pour excusé: uous certifiant

trewly that it were nat for to pray and requyre our lady of Matheley

ueritablement que se ne fust pour prier et requerir nostre dame de Matheley

that it please her to sende you or to gyve to fare well again and helth
qui luy plaise uous donér conualescence et santé

to recover, with longe youth and age of Nestor, I had lefte my
recouvrér, avec longue jeunesse et uiellesse Nestorienne, jeusse laissé mon

hert all togyder with you, as in the place of this worlde, where lieth all
coeur totalement avec uous, come ou lieu de ce monde ou gisent toutes

his thoughtes and affections most desired, praieng the swete Jesu thus, moste
ses pensées et affections plus desirées, priant le doulz Jhesus a tant, tres

hygh, most illustre and most excellente lady Mary, to gyve you the hole fulfillyng
haulte, tres illustre et tres excellente dame Mary, uous donér lentiér

of your nobles desirs.
de uos nobles desirs. Amen.

Page 1038

CONFABULACION BETWENE THE LADY MARY AND HER SERVANT GYLES TOUCHYNG THE PEACE.

Mary.

How ye shew well that ye have great cure and care to
Comment, Giles, uous montrés bien quaués grant cure et soing de

teche me when ye do you absente se from me.
maprendre quant uous uous absentés ainsy de moy.

Gyles.

Trewly me thinke that I am continually here.
Certes, madame, il me semble que suis continuellement icy.

Ma.

Ye, and where were ye yester day at soupper, I praye you.
Uoire, et ou estiés uous hier a soupper, je uous prie.

Gyles.

Trewly ye have reason, for I forgate myselfe yester night,
Ueritablement, madame, uous aues raison, car je mentroubliay ersoir

bycause of company and of
a cause de compagnie et de communication.

Mar.

I pray you, faire sir, make us partener of your
Je uous prie, beau sire, faictes nous parconniere de vostre communication,

for I suppose that it was of some good purpos.
car j'estime quelle estoit de quelque bon purpos.

Gyl.

Trewly it was of the peas, the whiche (as they sayde) is proclamed
Certes, madame, elle estoit de la paix, laquelle (come on disoit) est proclamée

by all this realme.
par tout ce royaume.

Mar.

Of what maner, I praye you, and of what lastyng.
De quelle maniere, je uous prie, et de quelle durée.

Gyl.

Of the lastyng shall God answer you, but of the forme and maner
De la durée uous respondera Dieu, madame: mais de la forme et maniere

can I shew and report, the whiche is cried as wel in this realme of England
uous scay je bien rapporter, laquelle est criée tant en ce royaume d'Engleterre

as of France, so longe as the noble Kyng your father
come de France, et tant que le noble roy Henry uostre pere

(whiche God preserve) shall lyve and the frenche Kynge lykewyse with
(que Dieu ueulle garder) uiura et le roy Francois pareillement avec

the addicion of a day.
laddicion dung jour.

Page 1039

Ma.

Must that day be anexed to it and comprehended.
Fault il que ce jour y soit anexé et compris.

Gil.

Ye verily
Ouy certes, madame.

Ma.

Wherfore me thynke that it is but
Pourquoy il me semble que ce nest que superfluité.

Gil.

Nat so, save your for the addicion of a day yelde the tyme infinit,
Non est, sauue vostre grace, car laddiction dung jour rent le terme infiny,

for the lastyng of the worlde is but a day.
car la durée du monde nest qung jour.

Ma.

I wolde fayne understande how that may be, how be it I love better
Jentenderoie uoullentiér coment cela peult estre, toutesuoies jayme mieulx

that for this tyme you do declare unto me what is of peas.
que pour le present uous me declarés que cest que paix.

Gil.

Well I shall kepe to you the exposition of that day for whan I shall
Bien, madame, je uous garderay lexposicion de ce jour pour quant uous

teche you the spere the whiche parteine and serve to that purpos, and touchyng
apprendray lespére laquélle duit et sert a ce propos, et touchant

the peas, howbeit that, after the holy lectres, it excede and surmonte
la paix, combien que, selon la saincte lectre, elle excéde et sourmonte

all the wyttes, I shall recite you neverthelesse that that of it saint
tous les sens, je uous reciteray nonobstant ce que dict monsieur saint

Austin sayth, spekyng of the worde of God, in his nynty and seven omelye,
Augustin parlant de la parolle de Dieu, en sa nonante septiesme homelie,

howbeit that it shulde be necessary to make you understande first
combien quil seroie necessaire uous donnér a entendre premièrement

how many kyndes or maner of warres ben.
quantés espèces ou manière de guerres sont.

Ma.

How is there more than one maner.
Coment, en est il plus dune manière.

Gil.

there is warre betwene reame and reame, betwene town and
Certes, madame, il y a guerre entre royaume et royaume, entre uille et

towne, betwene parishe and parishe, betwene linages, betwene neygbours, betwene
uille, entre paroisse et paroisse, entre lignages, entre uoisins, entre

Page 1040

the man and the wyfe, and betweene the body and the soule, the whiche is the
lhome et la femme, et entre le corps et lame, laquelle est la

worste, and more dangerous of the others, but touchyng the peas, saint
pire, et plus dangereuse des aultres, mais quant est de la paix, saint

Austin, in the place above alleged, sayth that it is clenness of thought,
Augustin, ou lieu dessus allegué, dict que cest serenité de pensée,

peas of corage, simpleness of hert, bonde of love, feliship of
tranquilité de courage, simplesse de coeur, lien damour, compagne de

charite, breker of strife, pacifier of molifiyng of
charyté, destruiseresse destrif, apaiseresse de batailles, mollifieresse de

angre, vainquisshyng proude men, love of humilite, asswagyng
couroux, uainqueresse des orgueilleus, amour dhumilité, en mitigant

discorde, and agreyng enemys, nat sekyng but his, that can nat
les discordz, et concordant enemis, non cerchant laultroy, non scachant

hate, callyng nothyng his, that can nat exalte him nor be proude,
hair, rien ne reputant sien, non scauant soy exaultér ne enorgueillir,

techyng to love, pleasante to every body, he that had it let him kepe it,
ensegnant aimér, plaisante a chescun, quil la tient sy la garde,

he that lese it let him seke it, for he that in it shall nat be founde, God the father
qui la pert sy la cerche, car qui en elle trouué ne sera, Dieu le père

him shal pluck out of his roote, and the Sonne him shal disenherite, and of the Holy
le disracinera, et le Filz le deshéritera, et du Saint

Goost shalbe unknowen, wherof the same be willyng us to defende and
Esprit sera descongneu, dont icelle Trinité nous ueulle deffendre et

kepe.
gardér.

Ma.

In my God it is a great thyng of peas; I requyre the swete Jhesus
En mon Dieu, cest grand chose que de paix; je requiér le doulz Jhesus

to mainteyne it to us.
la nostre uoulloir maintenir.

Amen.

Page 1041

**HERE FOLOWETH CERTAYNE VERSES, SENDE TO THE NOBLE LADY MARY,
FOR TO LERNE THEM HER SCOLE MAISTER BEYNG SICKE.**

To you, most soverayn,
A uous, tressouueraine maistresse,

I sende these vers, wylling to signifie
jenvoy ces uerse, uoullant sinifiér

my great dolour and that more me oppresse
ma grand doulleur et que plus mopresse

that I may nat you serve and teche
ne uous pouoir seruir et enseygnér

than for to suffre sekeneesse and danger
que de souffrir maladie et dangiér

wherfore, if it please so moche do to your grace
pourquoy, sil plaist tant faire a uostre grace

them for to rede some lyttell space
les uoulloir lire quelque petite espace

my hope is that better therof ye shalbe
mon espoir est que mieulz uous en vauldrés

and by that point also shall excuse me.
et par ce point aussi mescuserés.

Me thinketh that other than you ought nat
Il me semble quaultre que uous ne doibt

to be judge of my greuous payne
estre juge de ma griéfue payne

bycause also that other myght nat
pource aussy quaultre ne pourroit

nat knowyng the whiche lede me
non congnoisant la cause qui me maine

but as for you, I know that ye be
mais quant a uous, say questes certaine

of the good wyll and great
du bon uoulloir et grande affection

Page 1042

that I have to serve, and the
quay de seruir, et la déuocion

to fulfyll of hert and of power
pour accomplir de coeur et de pouoir

all that whiche please to the noble kynge to wyll.
tout ce quil plaist au noble roy uoulloir.

Amonge the monethes which fulfyll the yere
Entre les mois qui accomplissent lan

two there ben specially
deux en y a spécialement

whiche have done me yvell, great sorowe and harme
qui mont fait deul, grant ennuy et ahan

it may nat be that I say otherwyse
estre ne peult que je die aultrement

often I have sene theyr maner and how
souvent ay ueu leur maniere et comment

they me have entreated, without any deservyng
ilz mont traicte, sans lauoir deseruy

bycause they ben of courage bounded
pour ce quilz sont de courage asseruy

never lovyng the workes of the springe of the yere
naimant jamais les oeures de printemps

rather without cesse than doth yvell at all tymes.
ains sans cessér leur font mal en tous temps.

The principall of the whiche more I me complayne
Le principal duquel plus je me plains

in his blason him doth name
en son blason se fait nommér Décembre

by him I have made weppyng and syghes many
par luy ay fait pleurs et soupirs mains

never shall it be but I shall
ja ne sera que ne men remembre

Page 1043

he and me have ravyshed a
luy et Januiér mont tollu ung membre

whiche me shall make that so longe as I shall lyve
qui me fera que tant que je uiuray

in great sorow fromhensforth shall go

en grant doulleur doresnauant iray
wherfore I drede that in great melancoly
pourquoy je crains quen grant merencolie
at the latter ende shall behove that therof I lose my lyfe.
en fin fauldra que jen perde la uie.

If it hap nat that the springe
Sansy naduient, que printempz gracieuz
to his commyng the whiche is nygh
a sa uenue laquelle est prouchaine
beholdyng me and seyng so pitious
me regardant et uoiant sy piteuz
to heale me, put him nat in paine
de me guerir ne se mecte en paine
for trewly, I know well that he love me
car pour certain, bien je scay quil mayme
by him first in this worlde was I put
par luy primiér en ce monde fus mys
with that always he hath him indever
auec ce tousjours sest entermys
duryng his tyme, to do me somme good
son temps durant, de me faire du bien
wherof from ever I shall yelde me for his.
dont a jamais je me tiendray pour sien.

Whiche I requyre that it may hap
Ce que requiér ainsy puist aduenir
to the ende that to God I may crie mercy
affin qua Dieu puisse criér mercy

Page 1044

of my synnes, and to go and come
de mes pechéz, et allér et uenir
in servyng you, for to satisfie also
en uous seruant, pour satisfaire aussy
to your good dedes, that do entreate me so
a uos biens faitz, qui me traictéz ainsy
wherfore next Good, I am more bounde
dont apres Dieu, je suis plus obligéz
to your grace, than to any under heven
a uostre grace, qua nul dessoubz les cielz
wherfore in the meane tyme that I shalbe in this worlde
pourquoy tandis que seray en ce monde
I shall him requyre to kepe you pure and clene.
luy requerray uous garder pure et monde.

Amen.

**A COMMUNICATION BETWENE THE LADY MARY AND HER AMENER,
HER GRACE BEYNGE WITH A PRIUY FAMILY
IN THE PARKE OF THEUKESBERY.**

Mary.

Ah, maister Amener, I had nat wened that ye had so forgotten
Ha, monsieur l'Aumosnier, je neusse pas cuidé que meussés ainsy mise

me.
en oubly.

Laum.

Howe, madame.
Coment, madame.

Ma.

Bicause that ye well knowe that I solytarie and of all company destytute,
Pource que bien scaués que moy solitaire et de toutte compagnie destituée,

ye have me forsaken and lefte.
uous maués relenquie et laissée.

Lau.

God forbede, madame, that it be as ye say, for it is nat to you
Ja Dieu ne ueulle, madame, que soit come uous dictes, car il ne uous est point

unknowen that I must nede be with your counsayle, leavyng to them of
incongneu quil ne me faulte estre avec uostre conseil, les assistant de

my power.
mon pouoir.

Page 1045

Ma.

I had wened neverthelesse that for the regarde of me and of your profyte,
Jeusse cuide toutesfois que pour le regard de moy et de uostre prouffit,

ye had made you dispensed.
uous uous eussés fait dispensér.

Lau.

Trewly, madame, there is nothyng in my power that I ne dyd for the honour
Certes, madame, il nest chose en mon pouoir que je ne feisse pour lhonneur

of you, how be it that I do nat understande well what thyng ye do thynke,
de uous, combien que je nentens pas bien quelle chose uous pensés

spekyng of dispence and of profyte.
parlant de dispense et de prouffit.

Mar.

I understande by the dispence, that ye myght excuse you from the counsayle for
Jentens par la dispense, que uous uous pouiéz escusér du conseil pour

a tyme, and touchyng the profyte, ye knowe that whan I dyd prayse
ung temps, et touchant le prouffit, uous scaués que quand je prisioie

your frenche, ye dyd warrant me that within a yere I shulde speke as
uostre francois, uous masseuriez que dedans ung an le parleroye aussy

good or better than you, wherfore by suche condycion that so
bon ou meilleur que uous, pourquoy par telle condicion quainsy

myght be, trusting more of the power of the Kyng my father, and of the good
peult estre, me confiant plus du pouoir du Roy mon père, et la bonne

lady my mother than of myn owne, dyd promis you a good benefyce, for
dame ma mère que du mien, uous promis ung bon bénéfice, pour

the impetration of the whiche me thynketh that ye ought to do some dylygence.
lympetracion duquel il me semble que deueriez faire quelque diligence.

Lau.

Trewly, madame, that whiche me moved so to assure you was especially
Certes, madame, ce que me meult a uous ainsy assurer fut especialement

by cause of your synguler undentandyng, for the whiche ye ought well
a cause de uostre singuliér entendement, pour lequel uous debués bien

to thanke God, and for that also that after the phylosopher, the soule of the
Dieu remerciér, et pour ce aussy que selon le philosophe, lame de la

person is as the table planed, or as the perspectif or glasse
personne est come la table rasée, ou come le perspectif ou mirouer

in the whiche the kindnes and symilitudes of thynges ben shewed,
ouquel les especes et similitudes des choses sont représentées,

Page 1046

spiritually duryng the tyme that the sayd glasse or table is nat
signanment durant le temps que le dict mirouer ou table nest point

infected, deturpat, nor made foule by synne, wherfore contemplyng
contaminée, deturpée, ne maculée par peché, pourquoy contemplant

the same similitude to have confirmite and agreyng, to your grace, might
icelle similitude auoir conformité et conuenience a uostre grace, ne peuz

nat say that that I sayd.
non dire ce que je diz.

Ma.

In good fay I thanke our Lorde and shall thanke duryng my lyfe
En bonne foy je mercye nostre Seigneur et merciray tant que uiiray

of all the that it hath pleased to him to gyve me, howbeit that
de toutes les graces qui luy a pleu me donnér, combien que

of suche wherof ye me praise I have no knowlege, but
de telles dont uous me louéz nay je point de congnoissance, mais

all suche wordes set asyde, I shall nat be nevertheless of
toutes telles parabolles arriere mises, je ne seray toutes uoiez ja de

you content without mende.
uous contente sans amende.

Lau.

Without faute, ma dame, the mende shalbe made at your jugement, for
Infailliblement, ma dame, lamende sera faicte a uostre arbitrement, car

I have me exyled and banyshed from all lybertie for the love of
je me suis exillé et banny de toute liberté pour lamour de

your service, wherfore nothyng to me shalbe possible, that hayng your
uostre service, pourquoy rien ne me sera possible, que aiant uostre

I do nat fulfyll to my power.
comandement, je nacomplisse a mon pouoir.

Mar.

Trewly, I thanke you, mayster Amener, certifyeng you surely
Certes, je uous mercye, monsieur l'Aumosnier, uous asseurant tresacertes

that suche is my trust in you.
que telle est ma fiance en uous.

Lau.

Trewly, madame, ye may therof well be assured,
Pour certayn, madame, uous en pouéz bien estre assurée.

Mar.

Now than I comande you that ye visite me as often as
Or bien doncques je uous comande que me uisités le plus souuent que

Page 1047

goodly and conveniently may do, and specially at dinner,
bonnement et licitement faire poulrés, et especialement a disnér,

to the ende to talke and to speke with me.
affin de confabulér et comunicuér avec moy.

Lau.

It shalbe done, madame, if it please God.
Il sera fait, madame, se Dieu plaist.

Ma.

Se than that there have no faute.
Uoiéz donques quil ny ait point de faulte.

Lau.

Nomore shall have.
Non ara il, madame.

Finis.

**CONFABULACION BETWENE THE LADY MARY AND THE TRESORER
OF HER CHAMBRE, HER HUSBAND ADOPTIF, HER NOBLE GRACE
BEYNG WITHDRAWEN WITH PRIVY COMPANY IN A PLACE
SOLITARY, BY CAUSE OF THE DETH,
FOR INTRODUCTION IN THE FRENCH
TONGE.**

Amour.

Of love.

Marye.

In good faith, my husband, I can nat me mervaile ynough, how I have
En bonne foy, mon mary, je ne me puis asses esbahir coment je nay

no more comfort of you, for in that that I may se, ye take great
plus de confort de vous, car en ce que je puis veoir, vous vous souciez

care of your goute the whiche one hath tolde me that ye have, than ye
plus de vostre goute (la quelle on ma dit que vous avés) que ne

do of your wyfe.
faictes de vostre femme.

Le tre.

Certainly, ma dame, your grace hath sayd truthe, howbeit that it is agaynst
Certes, ma dame, vostre grace a dit uerité, combien que ce soit contre

my wyll and by force.
ma voullenté et par force.

Page 1048

Ma.

In my God with great payne may I beleve that the goute myght withholde
En mon Dieu, a grant paine puis je croire que la goute peult retenir

a good husbände havynge some love to his wyfe, specially
ung bon mary aiant quelque amour a sa femme, especialement

beyng so nygh of her, but he shulde more oftener to visyte her.
estant sy pres d'elle, qui ne la uinst plus souuent uisyter.

Le tre.

Without faulte it is an harde thyng and dyffuce to go to hym that hath neither
Infaillement cest chose ardue et difficile dallér a qui na ne

fote nor legges, nevertheles as your grace hath sayd, love
piedz ne jambes, nonobstant que comme uostre grace a dit, amour

dothe moche.
fait moult.

Ma.

I pray you, good syr, to declare me what it is of love. For ye
Je uous prie, beau sire, déclarés moy que cest que damour. Car uous

be a doctour and well lettred, with that that a good husbände ought to teche
estes docteur et bien lettres, avec ce que ung bon mary doibt endoctriner

his wyfe, wherfore I pray you to do your devour to teche
sa femme, pourquoy je uous prie de faire [uostre] debuoir dendoctriner

yours.
la uostre.

Le tre.

Infalibly, madame, the mater is to hyghe for my symplenesse, but
Sans faulte, madame, la matiere est trop haulte pour ma simplesse, mais,

for nat be wyllyng to disobey you, with my power I shall shewe you of it
pour non uous uoulloir desobair a mon pouoir je uous en diray

willyngly that I therof can.
uolentier ce que jen scay.

Ma.

I requyre you therof, my good husbnde, for I knowe you suche that ye cannat
Je vous en requier, mon bon mary, car je vous congnis tel que ne scariez

say ywell.
mal dire.

Le tre.

Now than sith that it please you so, trew it is that I fynde thre
Or sus doncques, puis quainsy vous agrée, il est vray que je treuue trois

maners of love, that is to say and the
manieres damour, cest a scavoir filialle, matrimoniale, et animalle: a

Page 1049

is that same which the father and the mother have to their chylde, the whiche
filialle est celle que le père et la mère ont a leur enfant, laquelle

is nat nor easy to your grace to understande, unto
nest pas facile ne aysée a uostre grace dentendre, jusques a

that that he please God that ye understande it by experiens, for the childe
ce quil plaise a Dieu que lentendes par experience, car lenfant ne

know never the love that the father and mother have toward him, unto
cognoist jamais lamour que le père et mère ont vers luy, jusques à

the tyme that he be made father or mother, bycause that suche love is nat reciproque
ce quil soit fait père ou mère, pour ce que telle amour nest pas reciproque,

or retorning, but rather comyng from God to the firste father or prothoplauste
ains uenant de Dieu au premiér père ou prothoplauste

it goeth and retourne to God from father to the sonne. The seconde
sen va et retourne à Dieu de père en filz. La seconde

love is called matrimoniall the whiche is of mervellouse strength and
amour est dicte matrimoniale, la quelle est de merveilleuse energie et

vertu, specially whan the mariages ben made after the ordynance of
vertu, especialement quant les mariages sont faitz selon lordonance de

God, that is to say, by true love and, if it were nat to eschewe prolixite,
Dieu, cest a dire par uray amour, et, si ce nestoit pour non estre prolix,

I myght recite you of many women whiche ben deed
je vous pouvroie reciter de plusieurs femmes qui sont mortes

and perished for the love of their husbndes, and many men lykewyse
et perie pour lamour de leur maris, et plusieurs hommes semblablement

for the love of their wyves. And touchyng to the thirde, that is sayde
pour lamour de leur femmes. Et quant a la tierce qui est dicte

animalle, she is without comparacion stronger than the others, bycause
animalle, elle est sans comparacion plus forte que les aultres, pour ce

it is the love that the soule hath to his body the whiche is so great that
que cest lamour que lame a a son corps, laquelle est sy grande que

nothyng is so moche loved in this worlde, that the man ne renounce and refuse,
riens nest tant aymé en ce monde que lhomme ne renounce et refuse,

first that he suffre his soule to departe from his body, nor nothing
premier quil souffre son ame departir de son corps, ne riens

Page 1050

is so terrible painful nor dangerous, that the man ne shulde suffre,

nest sy terryble, penible ne dangereus, que lhomme ne tollerast,
 before or rather than to suffre devorce or departyng betwene his soule and his
 auant souffrir diuorce ou separation entre son ame et son
 body, bycause that nothyng is so more to be drede than the deth: nevertheles
 corps, pour ce que rien nest plus a craindre que la mort: neantmoins
 all these premisses set aside, God the creatour hath loved us
 toutes ces premisses, madame, Dieu le createur nous a aimé
 above all the above sayd loves. For touchyng the filiall, he
 par dessus toutes les dessus dictes amours. Car touchant la filiale, il
 hath sende his dere sonne here beneth, for to redeme us and from the paines
 a envoie son chier filz ca bas pour nous redimér et des paines
 of hell to deliver, makyng him of a lorde a servant and of immortal mortall,
 denfer deliurer, le faisant de seigneur serf et de immortel mortel,
 suffring him rather to dye for us than in havyng pyte of him
 le souffrant plus tost mourir pour nous que en aiant pitié de luy
 to leve us in periclitacion. And touchyng the howbeit
 nous laisser en periclitacion. Et touchant la matrimoniale, combien
 that he had love inestimable to his swete mother the virgyn Mary, that
 quil eubt amour inestimable a sa douce mère la vierge Marie, ce
 natwithstandyng he hath chosen rather to dye for us, leavyng her
 nonobstant il a préesleu plus tost mourir pour nous, la laissant
 desolat and desconforted than in her comforyng to leave us in perdicion.
 desolée et desconfortée que en la consolant nous laisser en perdicion.
 And as touching to the animalle, what so ever great feare that he have had to
 Et quant a lanimalle, quelque grant pour quil ayt eubt de
 dye and what so ever love that he hath had to his soule, yet hath he nevertheles
 mourir et quelque amour quil ayt eu a son ame, sy sest il toutes fois
 made himselfe for us obedient unto the deth of the crosse: ther is,
 fait pour nous obedient jusques a la mort de la croix: vesla,
 madame, that that I can of love: howbeit nevertheles that the worlde
 madame, ce que je scay damour: combien toutes fois que le monde
 doth use of dyverse other maner of love, as of richesses and
 use de dyverses aultres manieres damours, come de richesses et biens

Page 1051

temporall goodes and other folishe love whiche do merite better to be called
 temporelz et aultres folles amours qui meritent mieulz destre appellées
 folyes than love, wherfore I love them, so prayeng your noble grace
 foliez quamour: pourquoy je men passe, a tant priant uostre noble grace
 to pardone me in that that I have sayd.
 me pardonner en ce que jen ay dict.
 Ma.
 In good soth my husbnde, I thanke you of good hert, for ye
 En bonne uerité, mon mary, je uous mercie de bon coeur, car uous
 have you ryght truly acquitted toward your wife.
 uous estes tresloialement acquité enuers uostre femme.
 Le tre.
 I requere to God, madame, that it may to you in suche wyse proffite that
 Je requier a Dieu, madame, quil uous puisse tellement prouffitér que
 in lovyng God above all thynges, and the good grace of the Kyng
 en aymant Dieu par dessus toutes choses et la bonne grace du Roy
 your father, and the good lady your mother of trewe love filiall
 uostre père, et la bonne dame uostre mère de uraie amour filiale,
 ye may love your husband whan God shall gyve you one, of
 uous puissés aimer uostre mary, quant Dieu uous en donra ung, de

good and trew love in suche wyse that it may be to the
bonne et loialle amour matrimonialle, de sorte que ce soit au

helth of your soule.
salut de uostre ame.

Ma.

So pleased our Lord by his goodnes to graunt me.
Ainsy le me ueulle nostre Seigneur par sa bonté ottroiér.

Page 1052

**WHAT IT IS OF THE SOULE IN GENERALL AND SPECIALL,
AFTER PHILOSOPHY AND SAINT ISYDORÉ, BY WAY
OF DYALOGUE BETWENE THE LADY MARY
AND HER SERVANT GYLES.**

Anima quid.

Mary.

After that well I me remembre, I have herde here above speke of the soule,
Selon que bien me recorde, je uous ay ouy cy dessus parler de lame,

but neverthesse ye have nat declared what it is, wherfore I wolde of it
mais toutes fois uous naues point déclaré que cest, pourquoy jen uouldroie

faine here somewhat.
bien ouir quelque chose.

Gil.

Trewly, madame, it shuld be necessary to be better lerned in good lettres
Certes, madame, il seroit necessaire destre mieulz qualifiéz ez bonnes lettres

than I am for to satisfy to your question.
que ne suis pour satisfaire a uostre question.

Ma.

It is nat to me unknowen that ye be nat of the best lettred of the worlde,
Il ne mest point incongneu que nestes pas des mieulz lectrés du monde,

howbeit that I doubt nat but of it ye can somewhat, wherfore
combien que point ne doute que nen scaues quelque chose, pourquoy

take hede that the lytell that ye therof can, be nat hydde to me.
gardés que le petit que uous en scaués ne me soit point celé.

Gyl.

Trewe it is that the philosophers have spoken therof, albeit that it hath nat ben
Il est bien uray que les philosophes en ont parlé, ja soit que pas na esté

sufficiently specially touchyng the soule resonable, for some
souffisanment, especialement touchant lame rationnelle, car aucuns

of them have it esteme mortall, as Pliny among other that sayth that suche
deulz lont estimé mortelle, come Pline entre aultres qui dit que tel

shalbe the soule after the dethe of the body, as she was before the lyfe
sera lame apres la mort du corps, quelle elle estoit deuaunt la uie

of the same, and it is nat yet come to my knowlege that
dicelluy, et il nest point encore uenu a ma congnoissance que

the holy scripture doth make of it any mention; but syth that your
lescripture sainte en face mention aulcune; mais puisque uostre

Page 1053

pleasure is suche, I shall recyte you (submyttyng me to the correction of
plaisir est tel, je uous réciteray (me soubmetant a la correction de

your grace, and of all persons connyng) that whiche I have therof gathered
uostre grace, et de toute persone scauante) ce que jen ay peu ceulliér

from the philosophers, and of the holy s. Isodore, wherfore it shall please you to knowe
des philosophes, et de saint Isidore; pourquoy il uous plaira scauoir

that all thynges created of God under the moone ben or elemented
que toutes choses créées de Dieu sous le globe lunaire sont ou élémentées

onely, as precious stones and other with all mettalles, or
seulement, come pierres précieuses et autres avec tous métaulz, ou

be elemented and vegetables, as herbes, trees, and all maner
sont élémentées et uegetables, come herbes, arbres, et toutes manieres

of plantes, or ben elemented vegetables and sensytyves, as ben
de plantes, ou sont élémentées uegetables et sensitives, come sont

all beestes, byrdes, fyshes, reptyll them movyng from place to other,
toutes bestes, oiseaulz, poissons, reptiles se mouuant de lieu a autre,

or ben elemented vegetables sensytyves and reasonable, as ben the
ou sont élémentées uegetables sensitives et rationelles, come sont les

men whiche have in them all the fours proprietees above sayd;
hommes lesquelz ont en eulz toutes les quatre proprietes dessus dictes;

for as touchyng the body (which is a masse elemented) it is but a
car quant au corps (qui est une masse élémentée) ce nest que une

conglutination and combination of the foure elementes in the whiche our
conglutination, et combination des quatre elementes ezquelz nostre

Lorde hath planted the soule vegetable by the whiche it groweth in length,
Seigneur a planté lame uegetable par laquelle il croist en longueur,

largenes, and depnes (whiche one calle thre dimensions) by cause that the
largeur et profondeur (quon dit trois dimensions) a cause que la

sayd vegetable hath in her foure vertues, by the whiche she subsiste and
dicte uegetable a en soy quatre uertus, par lesquelles elle subsiste et

groweth, that is to saye, the atractyve or appetitive, the retentyve, the digestyve,
croist, cest a scauoir, l'attractive ou appetitive, la retentyue, la degestive,

and expulsive; a body may nat ete without appetit, nor may nat
et expulsive; une personne ne peult manger sans appétit, ne ne peult

Page 1054

degeste without holdyng that mete, or keping in his stomake that which is eten,
degérer sans retenir ce qui est mange,

nor may nat grow by the vertue of such degestion without expulsion or
ne ne peult croistre par la uertu de telle degestion sans expulsion ou

evacuation, for it is nede or to destroy the meate receyved in
euaccuation, car il est de necessité ou de destruire la viande receue en

the stomake, or to be destroyed by the same; but to be wyllyng to warne your
lestomac, ou estre destruit par icelle; mais uouloir aduertir uostre

grace of all that which doth depend to this purpos, shulde be to be wyllyng to declare
grace de tout ce qui depend a ce pourpos, seroit uouloir déclarer

all the philosophy naturall withe all phisyque and astrologie
toute la philosophie naturelle avec toute phisycque et astrologie

in shewyng with all all the movyng of nature, wherof procede
en comprenant tous les mouuemens de nature, dont procedent

and sprynge all corruption and generation expoundyng what it is of the XII
et pulullent toute corruption et generation declarant que cest des douse

signes of the Zodiacque with the seven planettes and all the starres
signes du Zodiacque avec les sept planettes et toutes les estoielles

fixe, and to shew how the sayd XII signes havyng relacion, and similitude
fixe, et monstrer comment lesdictz douse signes aiantz relacion, et similitude

to the foure ben devided by foure triplicites the whiche
aux quatre elementz sont distinguez par quatre triplicités lesquelz

up holde and kepe up the fore sayd foure might and
suffulent et maintiennent les deuant dittes quatre puissances et

to the whiche one ought to have recourse for to put them agayn in ordre by medecyne
auxquelz on doit auoir recours pour les remectre en ordre par medecine

whan by some accident they ben alterat. But for to eschew so
quant par alcun accident ilz sont altérés. Mais pour euitér sy

wondrefull prolixite and that I have hope here and there therof to talke
enorme prolixité et que jay espoir cy et la den communiquer

somtyme with your grace, with that that of it ye have somewhat tasted
alcune fois avec uostre grace, avec ce quen aues quelque petit gousté

in lernyng the Ephemerides I shall passe it so.
en apprenant l'Ephémérides je men passeray a tant.

Page 1055

Now turnyng agayn to our porpos the soule vegetable, as I have tolde you, is
Or retournant a nostre pourpos lame uegetable, come je uous ay dit, est

setted within the myght elemented, the whiche doth upholde her as the
plantée dedans la puissance ellementée, la quelle la soubstient come le

vessell doth the lyker, and the sensytyve nother more no lesse is setted within
uaisseau fait la liqueur, et la sensitieue ne plus ne moins est plantée dedens

the vegetable, as the ratyonell is within the sensytyve, the whiche ye may
la uegetable, come la racionelle est dedens la sensitieue, ce que pouéz

clerely parceyve by that that whan the body begynneth to fayle
clerement apercevoir par ce que quant le corpz commence a deffaillir

by age or otherwyse, the vegetable lyfe herselfe by and by, bycause
par uiellesse ou aultrement, la uegetable se pert incontinent, pour ce

that thappetite begyn to fayle whith retayning and voyding, which make to perish
que lappetit se pert avec retencion et euacuacion, qui fait perir

the sensytyve, for as the persone lese the luste, and the dygestion, also soone
la sensitieue, car come la persone pert lappetit et le degérer, tout aussy tost

begynne he to juge the switte bytter, and the bytter swete, and say that he seeth
commence il a juger le doulz amér, et lamér doulz, et dit quil uoit

that whiche other may nat se, and also of all his fyve wyttes, and
ce que les aultres ne peuuent ueoir, et ainsy de tous ses cinq sens, et

lykewyse thintellectyve lese the reason and the jugement of thynges,
par consequent lintellectieue pert la reason et le discernement des choses,

for she beyng in the body humayne can nat attayne to any knolege
car elle estant ou cors humain ne peult paruenir a aulcune cognoissance

(nat beyng inspyred ghostly) without it be by the meane of the fyve
(selle nest inspirée diuinement) ce se nest par le moien des cinq

wyttes aparteyning to the sensytyve, for before that ye do understande any
sens appartenant a la sensitieue, car deuant que uous entendez aulcune

thyng, it behoved fyrst that it be to you shewed by the syght, by
chose, il faut premièrement quil uous soit monstré par la ueue, par

meane of colours, or by the hering by the meane of sound or voise, or by
moien de coulleur, ou par louye moiennant son ou uoix, ou par

smelyng, goustyng and tastyng, the whiche thyng so perceved by the fyve
flairér, goustér et tastér, laquelle chose ainsy aperceue par les cinq

Page 1056

wyttes, is sende to the comon witt which lieth in the formest parte of the
sens, est enuoiée au commun sens qui gist en la partie anteriore du

braine, the whiche goeth incontinently to the memory in the whiche he
cerueau, lequel sen ua incontinent a la remembrance en laquelle il

fynde what thyng it is after that one have him somtyme sayd and thought,
treuve quelle chose cest selon quon luy a autrefois dit et appris,

wherfore it appere clerly that these thre myghtes beyng in man
pourquoy il appert clérement que ces trois puissances estant en lhome

and named onely by the name of soule resonable, in takyng denomination
et nommée sullement par le nom de ame raisonnable, en prenant denomination

of the most noble, that is to understande of her which doth discesse,
de la plus noble, qui est a entendre de celle qui discerne,

ben hankyng the one of the others, and we juge clerely that the
sont dependantes les unes des aultres, et dijudicons clérement que la

sayd intellectuve or resonable is without comparation more excellent than
dicte intellectuue ou racionelle est sans comparation plus excellente que

the others, wherfore we juge her a thought or understandyng incarnate,
les aultres, pourquoy nous la jugeons une pensée ou intelligence incarnée,

the whiche is perpetuell and immortall, by cause that she is created to
laquelle est perpétuelle et inmortéle, pource quelle est crée a

thymage of God almighty, and if you aske me of what substaunce
limage de Dieu tout puissant, et sy uous me demandés de quel matière

she is, I may say that it is fyre spirituall as ben the angels of God,
elle est, je puis dire que cest feu esprituel come sont les anges de Dieu,

the whiche shalbe in her hyghe strength and prosperitie, whan she shalbe separate
laquelle sera en sa haulte uigueur et prosperite, alors quelle sera séparée

from her body, by the meane of the whiche she is infatuate, for by
de son corps, par le moien duquel elle est infatuée, car par

the vegetable myght, with the whiche she is bounde, she thynketh day
la uegetable puissance, avec laquelle elle est liée, elle pense jour

and nyght to serve her body of drinke and meat, and by cause of the sensityve,
et nuyt a seruir son corps de boire et menger, et a cause de la sensitue,

with the whiche she is lykewyse alyed, she hath her syght to
avec laquelle elle est semblablement aliée, elle a son respect a

Page 1057

generation, to pride of lyfe, and to all lyfe sensyble, the whiche yelde her
generacion, a orgeul de uie, et a toutte uie sensuelle, qui la rend

blunt, rude and forgetefull, and by the whiche she becomed spotted and cancred,
obtuse, rude et ygnorante, et pourquoy elle deuiet tachée et enroullé,

as a harneys or clere glasse doth cancre by humydite of
come ung harnois ou clér mirouer senroullist par humidité de

rayne or other moystnesse, in suche wyse that by this meane she is all togeder
pluie ou aultre moisteur, tellement que par ce moien elle est du tout

blynded, and hath no knowlege of her pasture wherby she becometh
aueuglée, et na nulle cognoissance de sa pasture par quoy elle deuiet

lene and folyshe; for as the wyse man saith, truth is the fote of the
mesgre et ignorante; car come dit le sage, uerité est le past de

soule. Aristotel saith that the soule is as a table made euyn and clere,
lame. Aristotle dit que lame est come une table rase et clére,

polished, in the whiche all maner shape and effigiation doth shyne clerely so
polie, en laquelle toutes formes et effigie reluysent clérement sy

well corporates as incorporates, by cause therof we understande with
bien incorporées come incorporées, a cause de quoy nous entendons avec

the angels, that is to saye, in the meane tyme that she is nat cancred by
les anges, cest a dire tandis quelle nest pas enroullée par

synne, as I have sayd before. Here myght I open unto you, what it is
peché, come jay dit deuant. icy uous poulroy je ouurir que cest

of understandyng actyve and passyble, but in this doying I shulde be to tedyouus.
dentendement agent et passyble, mais en ce faisant je seroie trop tedieus.

Ma.

Trewly, Gyles, I laude your persuacion, for by that that ye have sayde of it
Certes, Giles, je los uostre parsuasion, car par ce quen aués dit

I parceyve clerelye that it is nat possyble to declare it, the whiche one may
japarcoy clérement quil nest possible a la déclarer, ce quon peult

conjecte by that that she doth resemble unto God and to be wyllyng

conjecturer parce quelle ressemble a Dieu et uouloir

to declare his ymage shalde be wylling to do a thyng impossyble, bycause that he is
declarer son image seroit uouloir faire impossible, pource quil est

uncomprehensyble.
incomprehensyble.

Page 1058

Gil.

Trewly, madame, ye saye the truthe, neverthelesse that the scriplure wytnessed,
Certes, madame, uous dicte la uerité, nonobstant que lescripture tiesmoigne

that Moyses by the graunt of God dyd merit to se his posterioritie, the whiche is
que Moysse par lotroy de Dieu merita de ueoir sa posteriorité, qui est

to understande his workes, of the whiche knowlege, the cabalystes doth make
a entendre ses oeuvres, de la quelle cognoissance les cabalistres font

fyftie gates that they name of intelligence, sayeng that the sayd
cinquante portes quilz sournomment dintellygence, disant que le dit

Moyse had nat but fourty and nyne, by cause that the first is to knowe
Moysse nen eust que quarante neuf, parce que la premiere est congnoistre

God from the begynnyng, which is impossyble: but he may be knowen
Dieu par prius, ce qui est impossible: mais il est bien cognoissible

by posterius, whiche is to understande by his operacions, as knowlege
par posterius, qui est a entendre par ses operacions, come cognissance

comunely cometh unto us for bycause that we do serche the causes by
comunement nous uient pour ce que nous perscrutons les causes par

the dedes of them, and nat to the contrary. From hensforth I shall tell you
les effectz dicelles, et non point au contraire. Desormais je uous diray

of the philosophers of the whiche some have sayd that it is nombre movyng him
des philosophes desquelz les ungz ont dit que cest nombre soy mesme

selfe others that it is made of atmos which ben parties nat possible to divide
mouuant les aultres quelle est faicte de atmos qui sont partiez indiuiduez

or indivisible: others that it is fyre, the others that it is ayr, the
ou indiuisyble: aultres que cest feu, les aultres que cest air, les

others have sayd that it is a maner of armonie with others infinites
aultres ont dit que cest une maniere darmonie avec daultres infiniez

opinions: but levying them there, the prophete spekyng in our Lorde
opinions: mais les laissant la, Isaie le prophete parlant en nostre Seigneur

sayd: All brethyng have I made, whiche is to understande of the soules that our
dit: *Omne flatum ego feci*, qui est a entendre des ames que nostre

Lorde have all created, and the spekyng of those soules sayth:
Seigneur a toutes créez, et le psalmistre parlant dicelles dit:

He that created all hertes: whiche is to understande the soules, for the hert is
Qui finxit singulatim corda: cest a dire les ames, car le coeur est

Page 1059

the principall membre of the man, the whiche is the candelstyke of the soule
le principall membre de l'homme, lequél est le chandeliér de lame

susteynyng her by maner of spekyng, as the candelstyke doth the candell,
la soustenant par maniere de parler, come le chandeliér fait la chandelle,

the whiche beyng racionelle and quycke dothe quicken invisible and
la quelle estant racionelle et sensible uiuifie inuisiblement,

spiritually and mervellously all the membres and inward of the
spirituellement et merueilleusement tous les membres et entrailles du

body by the comandement of the , as well by within as by without,
corpz par le comandement du canter, tant par dedens come par dehors,

in ministring of onesplicable maner to the fyve wyttes their power, for she
en administrant de maniere indicible aux cinq sens leur pouoir, car elle

seeth by the eyen and heer by the eeres, she mel (smele) and by the nosse trilles,
uoit par les yeulz et oyt par les oreilles, odore et flaire par les narilles,

and discerne the savours by the , by the feelyng she reule and governe
et discerne les scaueurs par le goust, par le tacte elle regle et gouerne

all the membres of the body in generall, she and stande by
tous les membres du corps en generall, elle subsiste et demeure par

foure maner of reasons, by wit, sapience, and wyll,
quatre manieres de raisons, par sens, sapience, cogitacion et uoullenté,

the wit doth parteyne to the lyfe, the sapience to the understanding, the cogitacion
le sens appartient a la uie, la sapience a lentendement, la cogitacion

to the counsel, the wyll to the defence. And howbeit that the sayd soule
au conseil, la uoullenté a la deffence. Et combien que la dicte ame

be one, she hath nevertheles many kyndes and rayment in her,
soit unicque, elle a toutes fois plusieurs especes et aornament en soy,

for wher she doth brethe she is called sperit, whan she fele one
car la ou elle espire elle est appelée esperit, quant elle sent on la

do call her wit, and whan she take strength one call her corrage, whan she
nomme sens, et quant elle prent uigueur on la dit courrage, quant elle

understande, she is named understanding, whan she discusse, one call her
entend, elle est nommée entendement, quant elle discerne, on lapelle

reason, whan she consente, one call her wyll, and whan she
raison, quant elle consent, on la nomme uoullenté, et quant elle

Page 1060

remembre she is sayde memory, and whan she doth grow and encrease
remembre elle est dicte memoire, et quant elle uegète et croist en multipliant

the vertue, she is called the soule, the whiche lyveng justely is
la vertu, elle est appelée lame, laquelle uiuant loialement est

the ymage of God, so pleasant that he of her make is chare and his temple,
limage de Dieu, tant pleasant quil en fait sa chare et son temple,

as wytneseth my lorde saynt Poule sayeng.
come le tiesmoigne monsieur saint Paul disant: Templum Dei quod estis vos.

The beautie or raymentes of her ben, that by heryng she beleveth, she sercheth
Les aornementz dicelle sont que par louye elle croist, elle cherche

by desyre, and fynde by sapyence, she aske by prayers, and receyve
par desir, et treuve par sapience, elle demande par oraison, et recoit

by grace, she kepe by mekenes, and helpe by mercy, by
par grace, elle garde par humilité, et sequeure par misericorde, par

benignite forgyve, and aquiere by teachyng, she worke by penaunce,
benignité pardonne, et acquiert par doctrine, elle compose par penitence,

by examples, the faire thynges, and by connyng the clere and fayre, she
par exemples, les belles choses, et par sciences les clères et nectes, elle

is fre by onely goodnes, and by softnes, mansuetude, and swetenes
est franche par seule bonté, et par leintz mansuetude et douleur

plaine, she is by prudence discrete, and by symplenes hoole, by
playne, elle est par prudence circonspecte, et par simplicité entière, par

subtillie sobre, and by justice ryghtfull, she is nat hasty by impacione,
subtilité sobre, et par justice droiturière, elle est longanime par pacience,

and by obedience redy, by good doynng pure and clene, and by hope
et par obedience preste, par bien faire pure et monde, et par esperance

abydyng, by abstinence temperat, and by chastyte holy, by rejoissyng
attendable, par abstinence attournée, et par chasteté sainte, par resjouissement

spirituall and mery, and by confession open, by martirdom
spirituelle et joieuse, et par confession ouverte, par martire

aornat, and by unite catholicque, by concorde peasyble: and by love
aournée, et par unité catolicque, par concorde pacifique, et par amour

and deleccion of her neyghbour large and lyberalle: by charite perfect
et deleccion de son prouchain large et lyberalle, par charité parfaite.

Page 1061

Ma.

Trewly I am ryght glade to here you, and you have gyve me
En bonne uerité, Giles, je suis tresjoieuse de uous auoir ouy, et maués donnés

in your wordes solas and recreation: but I praye you, good syr, tell
en uos parolles soulas et récréation: mais je uous prie, beau sire, dites

us somewhat of the body and of his worckes.
nous quelque chose du corps et de ses operations.

Gil.

Certainly the body, as I have tolde you here before, is the
Certainement, madame, le corps, come je vous ay dit cy deuant, est le

vessell of the soule, and doth serve of none other thyng but to beare the soule,
uaisseau de lame et ne sert daultre chose que de porter lame,

howbeit that some sayen that the soule doth beare him, by cause that without
combien que aucun dient que lame le porte, pour ce que sans

her, he his deth and may nat styre ne move. But setting asyde
icelle il est mort et ne se peult bouger ne mouuoir. Mais postposant

suche reasons, trew it is that in his necessite he must be holpen by him
telles raisons, il est ueray quen ses necessités le fault secourir

that wyl kepe the soule hole in a hole body, in his hungre one must
qui ueult garder lame saine en ung corps sain, en sa fain lui fault

gyve him meate, and in his thurst drinke, in labour rest, slepe in
donné uiance, et en sa soif a boire, en labeure repos, sompne en

werinesse, in tristes and hevynesse myrth, in sorow confort and
fatigacion, en tristesse et ennuy armonie, en douloir confort et

helth, in sekenesse strength and vertue, in drede socour and in darkenes
salut, en foiblesse force et uertue, en crainte refuge et en tenebres

lyght, and in bataill peas, and lykewyse as the body may nat
lumière et en bataille paix, etc. et tout ainsy que le corps ne peult

lyve without that whiche to him is necessary, nother more nor lesse may
uiure sans ce qui luy est necessaire, ne plus ne moins ne

nat the soule by proces of tyme contynewe without her propre norsinge,
peult lame par diuturnité de temps subsistér sans sa propre nourriture,

for her meate his the dyvyn commandement, her drinke is
car sa uiance est le diuin comandement, son beourage est

pure praier, her bath is fastyng trew and ryghtwyse, her clothyng
oraison pure, son baing est june legitime et droiturière, ses uestementz

Page 1062

almesses of her propre goodes, her songe and melody is the
sont aulmosne de son propre, son chant et melodie est la

contynuall laude of God, her rest is parfait poverté, her helth
continuelle louenge de Dieu, son repos est parfaite poureté, sa santé

is the sekenes of the body, her socour is pure penaunce, her peace is
est la maladye du corps, son refuge est pure penitence, sa paix est

charite plentyfull, wherfore we ought well to folow our creatour
charité habondante, pourquoy nous debuons bien ensuiuir nostre creatour

Jesu Christ, and the saintes fathers whiche have ben before us in
Jhesu Crist, et les saintz peres qui nous ont précédés en

lernyng mekeness of Jesu Christ, devotyon of saynt Peter, charitie
apprenant humilité de Jhesu Crist, deuotion de saint Pierre, charité

of saynt Johan, obedyence of Abraham, hospitalytie of Loth, longe abidyng
de saint Jehan, obediencia d'Abraham, hospitalité de Loth, longanimité

of Isaac, sufferance of Jacob, pacience of Job, chastitie of Joseph,
de Isaac, tolerance de Jacob, pacience de Job, chasteté de Joseph,

softnesse of Moyses, stedfastnesse of Josue, benignytie of Samuel,
mansuetude de Moysse, constance de Josue, benignité de Samuel,

mercy of Davyd, almysdede of Tobye, abstynence of Danyell,
misericorde de Daud, aulmosne de Tobie, abstinence de Daniel,

speculation of Hely, experience of saynt Paule, penaunce soroufull of
theoricque de Helié, practique de saint Pol, penitence lacrimeuse de

Mary Magdaleyne, pure confessiion of the thefe, martiurdome of saynt
Marie Magdalaine, pure confessiion du laron, martire de saint

Stephane, and lyberalytie of saynt Laurence. Ye may se, right noble lady, all
Estienne et liberalité de saint Laurens. Vesla, tres noble dame, tout

that I have founde so well of the soule resonable, as of the vegetable
ce que jay peu trouuer tant de lame raisonnable come de la uégétable

and sensytyve, howbeit that I have here touched no thyng but the outside,
et sensitie, combien que nay icy rien touché sinon la superficie,

for I to you dare well say, that every worde here doth comprehende
car je uous ose bien dire que chescune parolle icy comprend

a great boke in his declaration, trustyng that whiche rudely I have
ung grant liure en sa declaracion, esperant que ce que rudement jay

Page 1063

here putte in termes shalbe occasyon that in tyme to come ye shalbe
icy mis en termes sera occasion que ou temps aduenir uous seres

moved for to serche the remenaunt, prayeng the swete Jesus, that it
instiguée de perscruter le demourant, priant le doulx Jhesuh que ce

be to the honour of God and to the helth of your soule.
soit a lhonneur de Dieu et au salut de uostre ame.

Ma.

God graunt that so may it happen.
Dieu ueulle que ainsy puist aduenir.

Amen.

OTHER COMMUNYICATION BETWENE THE LADY MARY AND HER AMNER, OF THEXPOSITION OF THE MASSE, FOR INTRODUCTION IN THE FRENCH TONGE.

Mary.

I have good memory, maistre Amnere, how ye sayd one day that
Jay bonne memoire, monsieur l'Aumosnier, coment uous disiéz ung jour que

we ought nat to pray at masse, but rather onely to here and
ne debuons point orér ne priér a la messe, ains seulement ouir et

harken, and dyd prove it by that one say comunely: I go here
accoutér, et le prouuez par ce quon dit comunement: je men uoy ouir

masse, whiche my lorde the President fortifyng sayd that we be nat
messe, ce que monsieur le President corroboreit disant que ne sommes point

bounde by the lawe to say, but onely to here, is it nat trewe?
obligés par la loy de dire, mais seulement douir, nest il pas uray?

Lau.

Ye, verely, madame.
Ouy, certes, madame.

Ma.

Wherfore than sayth the preest after the offytorie, in hym tournyng to the
Pourquoy donques dit le prestre apres loffertoire, en soi tournant au

people, pray for me, etc. and our Lorde at his passyon sayd to

peuple, priez pour moy, etc. et Nostre Seigneur a sa passion disoit a

his disciples, watch and pray, that ye entre nat in temptation, with that
ses disciples, ueillés et orés, affin que nentrés en temptation, avec ce

that if our Lorde wolde nat our prayers, why had he made
que sy Nostre Seigneur ne uouloit nos priérez, pourquoy eust il fait

the
le *Pater noster*.

Page 1064

Lau.

Certainely that whiche I shewed you was nat onely but for
Certainement, madame, ce que uous disoie nestoit seulement que pour

to shew you how you ought to maintene you at the masse, specyally
uous monstret coment uous uous debués contenir a la messe, especialement

unto that that one monysshé you for to pray.
jusques a ce quon uous admoneste de priér.

Ma.

In my God, I can nat se what we shall do at the masse, if we pray nat.
En mon Dieu, je ne puis uéoir que nous ferons a la messe se nous ne prions.

Lau.

No.
Non, madame.

Ma.

No, trewly.
Non, certes.

Lau.

Ye shall thynke to the mystery of the masse and shall herken the wordes that
Uous penserés au mistère de la messe et accouterés les parolles que

the preest say.
le prestre dit.

Ma.

Yee, and what shall do they whiche understande it nat.
Uoir, et que feront ceulz qui point ne lentendent.

Lau.

They shall beholde, and shall here, and thynke, and by that they shall understande.
Ilz regarderont, et accouteront, et penseront, et par ce lentenderont.

Ma.

I pray you, good syr, tell me what they shall thynke, so that I may
Je uous prie, beau sire, dictes moy a quoy ilz penseront, affin que puisse

se where lyeth that that ye tell me.
ueoir ou gist ce que me dictes.

Lau.

I shall shewe it you of good herte but if it please you
Je le uous diray de bon coeur, madame, mais sil uous uient a plaisir

it shalbe at soupper, for your diner is ended.
ce sera a souppér, car uostre disné est acheué.

Ma.

Well at soupper be it.
Bien a souppér soit.

COMMUNICATION AT SOUPER TO THIS PURPOS.

Mary.

Now, maistre Amener, I have herd say that promysse is dette.

Or sus, monsieur l'Amosniér, jay ouy dire que promesse est debte.

Page 1065

Lau.

Trewly it his trew, specially of the mouth of a faithfull man.
Certes, madame, il est certain, especiallement de bouche de fidél.

Ma.

Do ye nat holde you for suche?
Ne uous tenes pas itél?

Lau.

Ye verely.
Sy fay certes, madame.

Mar.

Now acquite you than and kepe promis, for to kepe promys cometh of
Or uous acquités doncques et tenés promesse, car tenir promesse vient de

noblenesse.
noblesse.

Lau.

Well, sith it is so that ye do comande it, it shall please you to know that the
Bien puisquainsy est que le comandés, il uous plaira scauoir que la

masse is the testament, the which our Lorde made before
messe est le testament, le quel Nostre Seigneur Jhesu Christ fist deuant

his deth and passyon, whiche is none other thyng (as ye well know) but the
sa mort et passyon, que nest aultre chose (come bien scaués) que la

laste wyll of a parson, touchyng the disposicion of is goodnes
darnière uoullenté dune parson, quant a la disposition de ses biens

after his deth, wherfore our Lorde wylling to dye for the humaine
apres sa mort, pourquoy Nostre Seigneur uoullant mourir pour l'humain

kyndred, dyd ordayne that his precious body shuld be put to deth for
legnage, ordonna que son precieuz corps seroit mis a mort pour

our synnes, in memory and wytnesse therof he lefte us and ordayned
nos péchés, en mémoire et tiesmoing de quoy il nous laissa et ordonna

us the sacrament of theaulter in remembraunce of his sayd passyon, to the ende
le sacrement de lautél en commemoracion de sa dicte passion, affin

that every one whyche shal beleve in the sayd mistery, that is to know in his
que chescun que croira ou deuant dit mistère, cest a scauoir en son

incarnation, passyon and resurrection represented in the foresayde sacrament
incarnation, passion et resurection representez ou deuant dit sacrement

shuld be made partener of the merite of the same, which is our redemption.
seroit fait participant du merite dicelle, qui est nostre redemcion.

Now it is so that we may make no greater honour to God
Or est il ainsy que ne pouons faire plus grand honneur a Dieu

Page 1066

than to estymat him trew, where as he is trew lyfe, nor greater dishonour
que lestimér uéritable (la ou il est uray uerité) ne plus grand deshonneur

than to mystrust hym. He hath left us the sayd sacrament by way of
que de le mescroire. Il nous a laisse le dit sacrement par manière de

testament, to the ende that every one of us may be proved by his fayth:
testament, affin que ung chescun de nous soit prouué par sa foy:

for so moche as the parson beleved, so moch she shall receyve: the masse
car autant que la personne croyt, tant elle rechoit: la messe

than is rehersyng of his glorious passyon, in the whiche lyeth the
doncque est recapitulation de sa glorieuse passyon, en laquelle gist la

remysyon of synnes, and where one ought to seke it, and nat elsewhere, for

remission des pechez, et la ou on la doit cercher, et non ailleurs, car

the gyveng remyssyon doth ratify and approve the repentaunce and contrityon
le donnant remission ratifie et approuue la compunccion et contricion

of the synner, askyng pardone by the meryte of the said passion, the whiche
du pecheur, demandant pardon par le merite dicelle passion, la quelle

is nat gotten in angre agaynst Anna, Caiphas, Pylate, Herode
ne saquiert pas en ce courouceant encontre Anne, Caiphe, Pilate, Herode

and the turmentours whiche dyd put our Lorde to dethe, and to be
et satellites qui meirent Nostre Seigneur a mort, et destre

soroufull that our Lorde hath so moche suffred for us, rather is all
desplaisant que Nostre Seigneur a tant souffert pour nous, ains est tout

the contrary, for he it defended, where he said: daughter of Jerusalem
le contraire, car il le defendist, ou il dist: fille de Jhrusalem

wepe nat upon me, but rather upon you and your chyl dren, as
ne plourés point sur moy, mais sur uous et sur uos enfans, come

he wolde have sayd: ye and they ben cause of my deth, for I dye in
sil uoulsist dire: uous et eulz sont cause de ma mort, car je meurs en

satisfaction of your synnes. In approbation of the whiche our mother holy
satisfaction de uos pechez. En approbacion de quoy nostre mere saint

Churche make myrth and her rejoyse in suche wyse, that she is nat aferde to say:
Eglise exulte et se resjouist tellement quelle ne craind point a dire:

O happy synne, which hath deserved suche a redemer! Ye, and that more
O heureulz pechez, qui a merité tél redempteur! Voire, et qui plus

Page 1067

is, she doth call the crosse swete, and the nayles the whiche were ryght swete
est, elle appelle la croix douce, et les clouz lesquelz furent bien doulz

for us, but nat for hym, for they hym peerced his glorious fete
pour nous, mais non mie pour luy, car ilz luy percèrent ses glorieus piédz

and handes, in shedyng his sacred and blessed blode, with inestymable
et mains, en respandant son tressacre et benoit sang, avec inestimable

payne and sorowe. We shall leave here tyll to morowe or another tyme,
paine et douleur. Nous laisserons icy jusques a demain ou une aultresfois,

if it so please to your good grace.
sy ainsy plaist a uostre bonne grace.

Ma.

The pleasure of God be done, maister amner, the whiche wyll rewarde you
Le plaisir de Dieu soit, monsieur laumosnier, lequel uous ueulle remunerer

of your good wordes.
de uos beaulz diz, etc.

**THE REMENAUNT OF THE SAYD COMMUNYCATION,
WICHE IS OF THE CEREMONYES OF THE MASSE,
FOR INTRODUCTION IN THE SAYD
TONGE.**

The amener.

Your hignes was wont here before to begynne altercation betwene
Uostre celsitude souloit par cy deuant commencer laltercation entre

us twayne, but bycause that I se you sadde and hevy more than
nous deux, mais pource que uous uoy pensive et remyse plus que

ye have of custome, I shall inhardysse and put me in prease at this tyme
naués de custome, je menhardiray et ingereray a ceste fois

to move you and provoke to wyllyng to here the exposition of the ceremonyes
de uous instiguér et prouocquer a uoulloir ouir lexposition des cerimoniez

of the masse.

de la messe.

Ma.

Without falte ye shall do to me servyce agreable, wherfore begynne
Infalliblement uous me ferés service agreable, pourquoy comencés

whan ye shall thinke best.
quant bon uous semblera.

Page 1068

Lau.

I suppose that your hath nat forgotten that which here before
Je suppose que uostre grace na point oublié ce que par cy deuant

I have shewed you of the masse, wherfore in procedyng further, it is
uous ay dit de la messe, pour quoy en procedant plus oultre, il est

trew that the cloth or the first lynyne that the preest put upon
bien uray que le uoille ou la premiér linge que le prestre met sur

his heed in makyng him redy at the masse, doth signifie the cloth wherof our
sa teste en se preparant a la messe, signifie le drap dont Nostre

Lorde had his eyen bynded, whan the tormentours gyvyng him
Seigneur eubt les yeulx bendés, quant les satellites luy donnant

blowes dyd say: prophesy who hath stroke the. Than he put on
des buffes et souffletz disoient: prophetise qui ta frappé. Puis il veste

the aube white that signifie the gowne whiche gave him reputyng him
laube blanche qui signifie la robe que Herode lui donna lestant

a fole, bycause that he beyng in his presence wold nat do some
fol, pour ce que luy estant en sa presence ne uoullut faire aucun

miracle. She do sygnifye also that so well the herer of the masse as
miracle. Elle signifie aussy que sy bien lauditeur de la messe come

the saier, ought to be chaste, or they be nat worthy to be to
le diseur, doibuent estre chaiste, ou ilz ne sont point dignes destre a

suche misteris. The gyrdell lykewyse sygnifye chastité, for our
tel mistère. La chainture pareillement signifie chasteté, car Nostre

Lorde in apperyng to his prophetes was wont to say: gyrt thy
Seigneur en apparissant a ses prophètes seult dire: chains tes

raynes as a man, for the vertu of the man lyeth in his rains;
rains come ung homme, car la vertu de lhome gist ez rains;

than the stole that he put about his necke and of his body, signifieth
puis le stole que met entour de son col et de son corps, signifie

the corde wherof his precious body was tyed to the pylar by Pylate. The
la corde dont son precious corps fut lie au piliér par Pilate. Le

manypule doth sygnifye the same wherof his precieuse handes were bounde,
manipule signifie celle dont ses precieuses mains furent liées,

and the chasuble doth represente the pylard and the crosse that Pylate dyd
et le chasuble represente le pilier et la croix que Pilate luy

Page 1069

charge upon his precious sholdres after that he had juged him to be
chargea sur ses espauls precieuses apres lauoir jugés destre

for us crucified; than after in lyke maner as in beryng
pour nous crucifiéz; puis apres ne plus ne moins come en portant

the same crosse, he went to his deth and passyon, in lyke wyse come
icelle crois, il alloit a sa mort et passion, tout ainsy uient

the preest for to begynne the memory of the same, in himselfe
le prestre pour comencér la remembrance dicelle, en se

fyrst shrivyng to us, where as prayeng to God to be wyllyng him
premierement confessant a nous, la ou priant Dieu luy uouloir

to forgyve, we confesse us to him lykewyse, the whiche praieng

pardonnér, nous nous confessons a luy pareillement, le quel priant

for us, doth gyve us absolucion, than goth he to the auter. I
pour nous, nous donne absolucion, puis sen ua a lautél, etc. Je

have declared to you the signification of the raymentes belongyng to the service
uous ay declarés les signifianges des abillementz appartenant au service

of the masse, unto the introite of the same, the whiche with the
de la messe, jusques a lintroite dicelle, le quel avec le

overplus shalbe to you declared an other tyme at your good pleasure and
sourplus uous sera epilogué ung aultre fois a uostre bon plaisir et

commandement.
commandement.

Ma.

I agre therto, maistre amener, thankyng you with all my herte
Je my acorde, monsieur laulmosniér, uous remerciant de tout mon coeur

of your good techyng.
de uostre bonne doctrine.

Lau.

To good and honour may it tourne to you, madame.
A bien et honneur uous puist il tournér, madame.

Finis.

Page 1070

**ANOTHER COMMUNICATION, WHERE DYVERSE MANER METES BEN NAMED,
WHICHE IS A RIGHT NECESSARY WAYE FOR SHORTELY
TO COME TO THE FRENCH SPECHE, BETWENE
THE LADY MARY AND HER AMENER.**

Lau.

Moche good do it you, madame.
Bon prew uous face, madame.

Ma.

Ye be well come, maistre Amener.
Bien soiéz uenu, monsieur laumosniér.

Lau.

What? is it so late. Trewly I thought nat that the borde was
Comment? est il sy tard. Certes je ne cuidoie point que la table fust

covered nor the clothe layde, and ye have alredy eaten your porage.
couuerte ne la nappe mise, et uous aués desja mengé uostre potage.

Ma.

How knowe ye the same, paraventure that I have nat.
Coment le scaues uous, peult estre que non ay.

Lau.

It is well possyble, how be it that I wolde parswade you to eate of it
Il est bien possible, combien que uous uouldroie persuadér den mengér

somwhat.
quelque petit.

Ma.

Why, I pray you.
Pourquoy, je uous prie.

Lau.

Bycause that physicions ben of opynyon that one ought to begyn the meate
Parce que les medecins sont dopinion quon doibt comencér le mengér

of vitayle to thende that by that meane to gyve direction
de uiandes liquides affin de par ce moien donnér direccion

to the remenant.
au sourplous.

Ma.

How are you a phisycion, I thought that ye had been a lawyer.
Coment estes uous medecin, je cuidoye que vous fusses legiste.

Lau.

Trewly men ben wont to say every man to be a phisycion, but he
Certes, madame, on seult dire ung chescun estre medecin, synon le

that is sycke.
malade.

Page 1071

Ma.

And ye be nat sicke, wherfore ye have concluded you a phisycion,
Et uous nestes point malade, pourquoy uous uous estes conclud medecin,

declare me therfore the qualyties and properties of these meates
déclarés moy doncques les qualités et propriétés de ces uiandes

that I may knowe the whiche ben most holsome for me, and
que puisse congnoistre lesquelles sont les plus saines pour moy, et

I shall alowe your phisycke.
japprouueray uostre medecine.

Lau.

Certainly, madame, I shall shewe you gladly all that I can. I have
Certes, madame, je uous en diray uoullentiér ce que jen scay. Je vous

tolde you alreedy myne advyse of the porage, and touchyng the befe: I
ay desja dit mon aduis du potage, et touchant le beuf: je

do estymate him of nature melancolyke and engendre and produce grose
lestime de nature melancolyque et engendre et produit gros

blode well norisshyng folkes and of stronge complexion, whiche
sang bien nourissant gens robustes et de forte complexion, qui

occupy them in great busynesse and payne; the moton boyled is of
se exercent en grand trauaill et labeurs; le mouton bouilly est de

nature and complexion sanguyne, the whiche, to my jugement, is holsome
nature et complexion sanguine, lequel a mon jugement est sain

for your grace; capons boyled and chekyns ben lykewyse
pour uostre grace; chapons boullis et poucins sont semblablement

of good nourysshing and doth engender good blode, but whan they ben
de bonne nourriture et engendrent bon sang, mais quant ilz sont

rosted, they ben somewhat more colloryke, and all maner of meates
rostiz, ilz sont ung tantet plus colericques, et toute manières de uiandes

rosted the tone more the tother lesse. And all foules and byrdes
rostiez lune plus laultre mains. Et toutz uollatilles et oyseaulz

of water as ben swannes, gese, malardes, teales, herons, bytters,
de ruières come sont cignes, oiez, malartz, cercelles, hairons, butors,

and all suche byrdes ben of nature melancolyke, lesse neverthelesse
et tous telz oyseaulz sont de nature melancolicques, moins toutesfois

rosted than boyled. And conys, hares, rabettes, buckes, does, hartes,
rostis que boullis. Et conins, lieures, laperaus, dains, daines, cerfs,

Page 1072

hyndes, robuckes or lepers holde also all of melancoly, but
biches, cheureus ou saillantz tiennent aussy tous de melencolie, mais

of all meates the best and most utille to the body of man is of

de touttz uiandz la meillure et plus utile a corps homain est de
capons, chыckyns, faisantes, partriches, yonge partriches,
chappons, poucins, faisans, perdris, perdreaus, plouuiers, pigeons,
quailles, suites, wodcockes, turtell doves, knyghtes, stares,
calles, becasses, uidecocz, tourterelles, cheualiers, estourneauz,
sparows, or , finches, , gold finches,
moinons, ou passeriauz, pinchons, uerdieres, frions, cardinotes, linotes,
thrushe felde fare, and all kyndes of small byrdes, (wherof the
maluis griues, et toutes espées de petis oiseletz, (desquelz les
names ben without nombre) ben metes norisshyng and of litell degestion,
noms sont infinitz) sont uiandes nourrissantes et de facile digestion,
and that engendre good blode, howbeit that in Spaine and in
et qui engendrent bon sang, combien quen Espagne et en
France the use of suche metes is more to be commended than ours.
France lusage de télz uiandes est plus comendable que le nostre.

Ma.

Why, I pray you, have ye nat haboundance of suche game in this
Pourquoy, je uous prie, nauons nous pas plenté de tél gibiér en ce
realme as they have there.
roialme come ilz ont la.

Lau.

Ye forsoth, madame, but we do nat use it so well, for they begynne
Sy auons certes, madame, mais nous nen usons point sy bien, car ilz commencent

alwayes with the best and ende with the most grosse which they
tousjours la meillure et finissent a la plus grosse quilz

leave for the servantes, where as we do al the contrary.
laissent pour les seruiteurs, la ou nous faisons tout le contraire, et cetera.

If it please to your grace, we shall make ende of our comunicacion,
Sil plaist a uostre grace, nous ferons fin de nostre comunicacion,

unto soupper, at the which, if ye thynke best, we shall make an ende.
jusques a souppér, auquel, se bon uous semble, nous paracheurons.

Ma.

Se be it as ye wyll.
Ainsy soit come le uoullés.

Page 1073

THE COMMUNICATION AT SOUPER.

Mary.

Do ye remembre, maistre amener, that ye have nat yet satisfied of the
Uous souvient il, monsieur laumosnier, que naues pas encore satisfait des

complexions and propertes of meates that which have begonne, and nat
complexions et nature de uiandes que uous aues entamées, et non

finished.
acheuées.

Lau.

Trewly, madame, ye have reason, wherfore in fulfylling that which I have
Certes, madame, uous aués rayson, pourquoy en accomplissant ce que jay

begon, I do warne you that all maner meates sodden what
encomencé, je uous aduertis que toutes uiandes bouilliez quelles

so ever it be, holde more of the ayre and of the water (which ben two
quelles soient, tiennent plus de lair et de leau (qui sont deulx

elementes wherof doth come and springe blode and fleame: understande
elementz dont procedent et pullulent sang et fleugme: nentendes

nat neverthelesse but all maner of meate holde of the foure complexions,

pas toutes fois que toutes viandes ne tiennent des quatre complexions,

the one more and the other lesse, for if I be well enformed, the complexion
les unes plus et aultres moins, car se je suis bien aduertie, la complexion

of thynges take denomination of the qualites principall dominant in
des choses prent denomination de la qualité principale dominant en

the same) than they do of the other twayne. But of all maner of meate,
icelle) quelles ne font des aultres deux. Mais de toutes viandes,

the moost dangerous it that which is of fruites, as cheres, small cheryse,
la plus dangereuse est celle de fruitz crudz, come cherises, guingues,

great cherise, strauberis, fryberis, mulberis, preunes, chestaynes nuttes,
gascongnes, freses, framboises, moures, cornelles, prunes, chataignes,

fylberdes, walnuttes, cervyse, medlers, aples,
nois franches, grosses nois, cerues, mesles, pommes,

peres, peches, melons, and all other kyndes of
poires, pesches, melons, concombres, et toutes aultres espèces de

Page 1074

fruites, howbeit that youth, bycause of heate and moystnesse, doth dygest them
fruitz, ja soit que jeunesse, a cause de chaleur et moisteur, les digère

better than age dothe.
mieulz que uiellesse ne fait.

Ma.

Howe, mayster amener, this meate that we do eate do they engendre
Coment, monsieur laumosnier, ces viandes que nous mengeons engendrent-elles

the blode; I thought that we had our blode from our
le sang; je cuydoie que nous eussions nostre sang des nostre

byrthe.
naissance.

Lau.

Trewly, madame, so have we, but we do norysshe hym and encrease
Veritablement, madame, sy auons nous, mais nous le nourissons et encroissons

of meate, for as a phylosopher sayth: suche as the
des viandes, car come dit ung philosophe: quelles sont les

mete is, suche is the blode, and suche as the blode is, suche is the sprit,
viandes, tél est le sang, et quel est le sang, quel est lespérit,

and suche as the sprit is suche is the wyt, and suche as the wyt is suche is the
quel est lespérit, tél est le sens, et quel est le sens, telle est la

reason. Wherfore ye se clerely that the good mete cause
rayson. Par quoy uous uoiez manifestement que la bonne viande fait

the good understanding and good reason; holde you than to the
le bon entendement et bonne rayson; tenés uous doncques a la

beste and take nat to moche therof.
meilleure et nen prenés pas trop.

Ma.

In my God, I wene that my physicion whan I shall have one
En mon Dieu, je cuide que mon medecin quant jen auray ung

shall scante mende your reasons, wherfore I pray you to procede
pouldra a paine amender uos raysons, pourquoy je uous prie de procéder

that I may knowe my complexion,
que puisse congnoistre ma complexion.

Lau.

If it please you, madame, we shall abyde tyll another tyme,
Sil uous uient a plaisir, madame, nous differerons jusques a une aultre fois,

bycause that your supper is almost ended.
pource que uostre souppér est quasy acheué.

Ma.

Well, to morowe be it.
Bien, a demain soit.

THENDE OF THIS COMMUNICATION.

Mary.

Trewly, mayster amener, I thinke it longe to here the ende of our begonne
Certes, monsieur laulmosnier, il me tarde douir la fin de nostre encomencée

communycation.
comunicacion.

Lau.

In good soth, madame, I am redy to acqyute me, howbeit that I make protestation
En uerité, madame, je suis prect de me acquictér, combien que je proteste

before your grace that I shall speke therof as a clerke of armes,
deuant uostre grace que jen parleray come ung clerc darmes,

for I knowe nothyng of it but by here say.
car je nen scay rien que par ouir dire.

Ma.

Well, well, care ye nat.
Bien, bien, ne uous chaille.

Lau.

It is trouth, madame, that there is foure elementes, that is to say: the
Il est bien uray, madame, que sont quatre elementz, cest a scauoir: la

erthe, the water, thayre, and the fyre, the whiche have eche one a qualytie proper
terre, leau, lair, et le feu, lesquelz ont chescun une qualité propre

and one folowyng. The erthe is drie of her proper qualytie, and colde
et une cocomitante. La terre est seiche de sa propre qualité, et froide

by nature folowyng, the whiche cometh of the water that to her is nyghe:
par nature cocomitante, laquelle uient de leaue qui luy est prouchayne:

the water is colde of his ppopertie, but for the neighbourhode that she hath of
leau est froide de sa propriété, mais par la contiguité quelle a de

the ayre, she is moyst: the ayre of his proper qualytie is moyst, but by the
lair, elle est moiste: lair de sa propre qualité est moyst, mais par la

concordence that he hath to the fyre, he is hote: the fyre is hote of his
simbolisacion quil a au feu, il est chault: le feu est chault de sa

proper nature and drie by the erthe, to the whiche he is very nyghe; of the whiche
propre nature et sec par la terre, a laquelle il est concomitant; desquelles

foure qualyties naturall and folowyng dothe springe to us
quatre qualités naturelles et concomitantes nous resultent

Page 1076

foure complexions, for of heate doth springe the colerike whiche is hote
quatre complexions, car de chaleur pululle collericque qui est chault

and drie, of moystnesse is sayde the sanguyne hoote and moyst, of colde,
et sec, de humidité est dit sanguine chault et moiste, de froydure,

and flumatyke colde and moyst, of drinesse, the melancolyke colde and drie.
le flegmaticque froit et moiste, de seicheur, le melancolicque froit et sec.

Ma.

Trewly, if I have well remembred, ye have sayde here above that all thynges
Certes, se jay bien retenu, uous aués dict cy dessus que toutes choses

elemented have all the foure complexions.
elementées ont toute les quatre complexions.

Lau.

There is nothyng more trewe, madame.
Il nest riens plus uray, madame.

Ma.

Than have I foure complexions.
Doncques ay je quatre complexions.

Lau.

It is so, but as I have sayde to you here before, they take ever the
Il est ainsy, mais come je uous ay dit cy deuant, on prent tousjours la

denomination of the qualytie principall and havyng domynion.
denomination de la qualité principalle et dominante.

Ma.

Of what complexion do ye take me by your fayth.
De quelle complexion me dictes uous par uostre foy.

Lau.

In good fayth, madame, of the best.
En bonne foy, madame, de la meilleure.

Ma.

Ha, beware of flattery, for howbeit that I am yonge of yeres, yet have
Ha, gardes uous dadulation, car combien que soye jeune de ans, sy ay

I herde say neverthesse that every body hath a frende that dare him shewe his
je ouy dire toutesfois que chescun a ung amy qui luy ose dire ses

fautes, save princes and princesses, for the most parte dothe synge of placebo,
faultes, synon princes et princesses, car la plus part jouent de placebo,

and few of dilexi.
et bien peu de dilexi.

Lau.

Trewly, madame, your reason is good and trewe: natwithstandyng all
Certes, madame, uostre rayson est bonne et uraye: nonobstant toute

flattery and adulation sette a syde, I have sayd the truthe, for to the reporte of
adulacion et flaterie ariere mise, jay dit la uerité, car au report de

Page 1077

any connyng man ye have complexion sanguyne, whiche is the best
tout homme scauant uous aués complexion sanguine, qui est la meilleure

of the four, bycause that the others holden more of extermites, for in
des quatre, a cause que les aultres tiennent plus dextermités, car en

hete and moisture lyeth the lyfe of the man, and the more that he declyne to
chaleur et moisteur gist la uie de lhome, et quant plus quil decline a

coldenes and drinesse, whiche ben diametrally opposite and contrary to
froideur et seicheur, qui sont diamétralement opposite et contraire a

hete and moisture, the more he goeth to corrupcion, whiche is the deth: I
chaleur et moisture, tant plus il ua a corrupcion, qui est la mort: je

myght prove to you by reason unpossible to withstande that this your
uous poulroie prouuer par irrefragable et solides oppinions que ceste uostre

complexion is the beste, but for nat to be tedious nor malpleasant, I
complexion est la meilleur, mais pour non estre tedieus ne facheus, je

remitte it to an other tyme.
le remectz a une aultre fois.

Ma.

Forsoth it displease me that my dyner is ended, for I have taken great
Certes il me desplaist que mon disner est acheué, car jay priens grand

pleasure to your communication, and howbeit that my body is sufficiently
plaisir a uostre comunicacion, et combien que mon corps est suffisamment

saciate and fedde, yet remayne my soule nevertheles hongry

refocillé et repus, sy demeure mon ame toutes fois familleuse

and full of appetit of such metes as ye have here administréd.
et esuriente de telles viandes que luy aués administré.

Lau.

In good trewth I do rejoice me to see your grace so inclined
En bonne uerité, madame, je me resjouis de ueoir uostre grace tant propense

and disposed to be wyllyng to knowe and can, wherfore I shall be glad
et proclieue a uouloir scauoir et cognoistre, pourquoy je seray joieulz

to fulfill your good wyll where it shall please you to commande me.
daccomplir uostre uouloir la ou vous plaira me comander.

Ma.

I praie to God to rewarde you of your labour and good instruction, maistre
Je prie a Dieu uous remunerér de uostre paine et bonne doctrine, monsieur

amener.
laumosnier.

Page 1078

Lau.

God preserve you in all good prosperite.
Dieu uous maintiegne en toute bonne prosperité, madame. Amen.

THE DEVISION OF TYME.

Of atomos ben made the momentes, of momentes ben made the mynutes,
Des atomos se font les momentz, des momentz se font les minutes,

of mynutes ben made the degrees, of degrees the quarters of houres, of quarters
des minutes se font les degrés, des degrés les quartz dheures, des quartz

of houres the half houres, of half houres the houres, of the houres the
dheures les demye heures, des demye heures les heures, des heures les

dayes and the nyghtes of the whiche ben made wekes, of wekes the monthes,
jours et les nuitz desquelles se font les sepmaines, des sepmaines les mois,

of the monthes the foure tymes of the yere whiche ben the springe, somer, harvest,
des mois les quatre temps de lan qui sont printemps, este, automne

and wynter. Of the foure tymes ben made the yeres, of yeres ben made the whiche
et iuer. Des quatre temps se font les ans, des ans se font les

last four yeres and lustres fyve, of lustres ben made the fyfteene yeres, of
olimpiades et lustres, des lustres se font les indicions, des indicions

ben made the c. yeres, of ben made the tyme, whiche is sayd a m. yeres.
se font les siecles, des siecles se fait le temps, qui est dict evum.

Of is made the tyme wiche is sayd xv thousande yeres.
De evum se fait le temps qui est dict parigeneses.

The tyme is none other thyng but nombre of movyng, movyng
Le temps nest aultre chose que nombre de mouuement, mouuement

is cause of lyfe worldly, and lyfe everlastyng is our Lorde Jesu Christ; for
est cause de uie, et uie pardurable est Nostre Seigneur Jesu Crist; car

who so ever shall worshyppe hym and drede perpetually, in the lande of lyvers
quiconques lhonorera et craindra a perpetuite, en la terre des uiuantz

shall lyve.
uiura.

Page 1079

This letter *A*, in latyn, is as moche to saye as without, and tomos is divysyon, than Atomos is without divisyon.

Ye shall note, that atmos is a thyng so lytell that can nat be devyded, as a letter whiche is atmos, in grammer, out, is atmos in arisometry, a pricke is atmos in geometry, and the duste that flyeth in the sonne beame ben atmos, and a twyncllyng of an ey whiche may be taken here for atmos.

The Greeks were wont to reken by Olympiades, whiche ben four yere; the Romayns by lustres, whiche ben fyve yeres: and by indicions that ben made of thre lustres, which ben fyftene yeres: a secle is an hundred yere, and somtyme taken for a mannes lyfe. Evum is take lykewyse for a mannes age, and for a thousande yeres, and Parigeneses for fyftene thousande yeres, and tyme is taken for the lastyng of all the worlde.

Thus endeth the seconde and laste boke of this introduction.

Printed at London by Thomas Godfray.

CUM PRIUILEGIO A REGE INDULTO.

Page 1081

TABLE DES RÈGLES

ET DES MOTS

POUR LA GRAMMAIRE DE PALSgrave ¹.

Note 1: ([retour](#)) Cette table n'existe pas dans l'édition anglaise: elle comprend, outre les mots tombés en désuétude, tous ceux qui offrent, pour le sens ou l'orthographe, quelque différence avec l'usage actuel de notre langue.

A	
A; sa prononciation, 2. -- Suppression de l'a, dans certains cas, à la fin des mots, 42. --Devant un <i>M</i> ou un <i>N</i> . --Sa prononciation, p. XVII. --a long, 53. --Ne termine jamais un nom substantif singulier, p. XXVI; ni un nom adjectif singulier masculin, p. XXVII.	Abisme, 172. Ablatif, 327. A bon chief, 843. Abreuoyr, 222. A brief dire, 831. Abriefue (je), 629. Abscons (je), 584. Absconsse, 216. Absente (je), 415. Absolut, 305. Absorbs (je), 744. Abstiens (je), 544. Abstrahys (je), 526. Abstrais (je), 669. Abuse (je), 639. Abusion, 245. A cause que, 865. Accable (je), 473, 586. Accent; signification de ce mot <i>accent</i> en français, 46. -- Véritable accentuation en français, p. XX, 48, 49, 51. Accointée, 290. Accointement, 218. Accoler, 23. Accollee, 228. Accollette (je), 625, 643. Accomble (je), 549. Accompaigne (je), 597. Accomparaige (je), 491.
A abandon, 831. Aage, 3. Aager, 3. Aaige (je), 418. Aayder, 3. Abandon, 832. Abandonnement, 222. Abaye (je), 586. Abeisse, 414. Abeisse (je), 625. Abestis (je), 623. Abhominable, 305. Abhominableté, 193. Abomination, 188. Abhomine (je), 419. Abillement, 206. Abilleté, 266. Abire (je), 431.	Accompare (je), 491. Accompte (je), 416. Accondiscionne (je), 574. Acconduis (je), 468. Acconsuys (je), 648. Accords; règles des trois accords en français, pag. XXXVIII. --Accord de l'adjectif et du substantif, 70. Accors (je), 400. Accouardis (je), 621. Accouardys (je), 416. Accouplis (je), 499. Accourcys (je), 704. Accourtis (je), 704. Accoustre (je), 433. Accoynte (je), 416. Accreue (je), 472. Accroys (je), 606. Accustume (je), 417. A celle fin, 866. A celle foys, 805. A certes, 837. Achapt, 198. Achapte (je), 455. Acheison, 287. Achemine (je), 761. Achetiue (je), 620. Acheuis (je), 470. Acheuissance, 217.

Page 1082

A chief, 843. A chief de piece, 827. Achoison, 205. Achoysonne (je), 550. Aciere (je), 639. Acoincte, 251. A comble, 847 Acompte (je), 540. Acondiscionne (je), 493. Aconduis (je), 605.	--Ont trois degrés de comparaison, mais formés autrement qu'en latin, pag. XXVIII. --Les adjectifs ont sept <i>accidents</i> , 69. --Accord des adjectifs, 297. Adjouge (je), 595. Adjouste (je), 417. Adjoyngs (je), 591 Adjuge (je), 493.	Aduertence, 193, 286. Aduerteure, 286. Aduertis (je), 440 Aduienant, 308. Aduiengne (quil), 131. Aduision, 285. Aduitaille (je), 766. Aduocatte, 290. Aduoue (je), 415. Aduoye, 329.
---	--	---

Aconsuys (je), 585.
 Aconuenance (je), 443.
 A costiere, 831, 841.
 Acouchement, 239.
 Acoulpe (je), 456.
 Acoulpe (je), 602.
 A coup, 804.
 Acource (je), 629.
 Acquest, 289.
 Acqueste (je), 563.
 Acquierge, 397.
 Acquiete (je me), 418.
 Acquisitif, 313.
 Acquouine (je), 417.
 Acquoyse (je), 488.
 Acquoyse (je), 630.
 Acrauante (je), 472.
 Acru, 311.
 Actente, 240
 Actif, verbe actif, p. XXX, 83.
 Actifie (je), 618.
 Actise (je), 532.
 Actraict, 215.
 Acueils (je me), 561.
 Acusement, 193.
 Acustumance, 242.
 A dens, 836.
 A despit, 837.
 Adestre (je), 715.
 Adextre (je), 715.
 Adhers (je), 434.
 A dire veoyr, 885.
 Adjectifs; ont trois genres:
masculin, féminin, commun,
 pag. XXVII. --Ont deux
 nombres, le *singulier* et le
pluriel, pag. XXVIII.

Adjutoire, 230.
 Admainer, 469.
 Admonestement, 286.
 Adnichile (je), 469.
 Aduile (je), 631.
 Aduilene (je), 631.
 Aduoystre (je), 490.
 Adnulle (je), 469.
 Adole (je), 603.
 Adole (je me), 475.
 Adompte (je), 626.
 Adoncques, 794.
 Adorne (je), 417.
 Adosse (je), 630.
 Adoube (je), 417, 508.
 Adoulcer, 28.
 Adoulcis (je), 480.
 Adoulcyr, 108.
 Adoulcys (je), 630.
 Adoule (je), 426.
 Adresse (je), 436.
 Adresse sur mon seant (je me),
 716.
 A droyture, 830.
 Adultere (je), 490.
 Adultre, 193.
 Adune (je), 467.
 Aduance (je), 417.
 Aduantage (je), 440.
 Aduenant, 307.
 Aduenanteté, 229.
 Aduentureux, 305.
 Aduenue, 207.
 Adverbes, 141. --De qualité, leur
 formation, p. XXXVIII.
 Advercité, 173.
 Aduers, 308, 252.
 Aduerse (je), 422.

Æ, 10.
 Aelle, 289.
 Aerin, 305.
 A eschays, 831.
 Affaict (je), 464, 627.
 Affaire (un ou une), 160.
 Affectif, 305.
 Affere (je), 434.
 Afferendons, 208.
 Affermer, 349.
 Affetardis (je), 625.
 Affiche (je), 478, 551, 623.
 Affichet, 250.
 Affichez, 746.
 Afficquet, 201.
 Affiert (il), 134, 413.
 Affie (je), 667.
 Affile (je), 775.
 Affin, 236.
 Affine, 236.
 Affine (je), 420, 446, 469.
 Affinite (je), 627.
 Affinitif, 306.
 Afflatte (je), 551.
 Affolle (je), 23, 617.
 Affolle (je me), 678.
 Affonde (je me), 718.
 Affondre (je), 470.
 Affriolle (je), 470.
 Affronte (je), 460.
 Affule (je), 603.
 Affuste (je), 448.
 Affuye (je), 595.
 Affuys (je me), 552.
 Affye (je), 418.
 A force, 833.
 Agache, 254.

Page 1083

Agambe(je), 735.
 Agardez, 146, 406.
 Agars, 829.
 Agasse, 306.
 Agasseté, 199.
 Agassure, 199, 216.
 Age (je), 617.
 Agence (je), 506.
 Aggreuer, 23.
 Aggresse (je), 647.
 Agitance, 287.
 Agouste (je), 581.
 Agout, 215.
 Agouttys, 233.
 A grant erre, 837.
 Agrappe (je), 485, 574.
 Agrauante (je), 472.
 Agrée (je me), 416.
 Agricole, 233.
 Agrieue (je me), 575.
 Agu, 302.
 Aguayt, 833.
 Aguayt appensée, 833.
 Aguaytance, 239.
 Aguayte (je), 605.
 Aguille, 247.
 Aguiser, 228.
 Aguiseté, 266.
 Aguyllier, 202.
 A gueulle bée, 845.
 Aguyllon, 16.
 A hazart, 832.
 Ahenne (je), 516.

Aincoys, 28.
 Ainschoys, 64.
 Aiscelle, 195.
 Aisceul, 195.
 Aisement, 216.
 Aisne, 311.
 Aixeuil, 196.
 Aixeuil, 196.
 Ajeunir, 11.
 Ajolys (je), 623.
 Ajourne (il), 412.
 A joyncies mayns, 845.
 Ajoyns (je), 591.
 Alabastre, 193.
 A la boulingue, 834.
 Alaict (je), 547.
 Alaigre, 307.
 Alaine, 201.
 Alaisne, 194.
 A la mynuyct, 804.
 Alangore (je), 544.
 Alangoure (je), 530.
 Alangourys (je), 658.
 Alant, 227.
 A la pipe du jour, 804.
 A la première chandelle, 804.
 Alayne (je), 465.
 Aleche (je), 527.
 Alechie (je), 537.
 Alegant, 289.
 Alegement, 207.
 Alemant (en), 142.
 A lemlée, 734.

Alouuance, 194.
 Alquenemie, 210.
 Altere (je), 421.
 Altitonant, 281.
 Alum, 194.
 Alume (je), 460.
 Alumpne, 223.
 Aluyne, 246.
 Alys, 324.
 Amailliotte (je), 744.
 Amatiste, 194.
 Amatte (je), 633.
 Amatye (je), 421.
 A mayn, 862.
 Amayne (je), 466.
 Ambicieux, 305, 310.
 Ambicion, 63.
 Ambigueux, 311.
 Ambles, 424.
 Ambroyse, 273.
 Ameisgrir, 108.
 Amence, 277.
 Amende, 211.
 Amendrir, 3.
 Amenée, 241.
 Amenement, 238.
 Amenuise (je), 426.
 Amer (une), 166.
 Amesure (je me), 597.
 Amenront, 401.
 Ameuris (je), 691.
 Ammonester, 23.
 Amodere (je me), 489.

Aheurte (je), 599.
Aheurte (je me), 696.
Ahonte (je me), 776.
Ahonter, 19.
Ahontis (je), 619.
Ahontye (je), 619.
Ai, sa prononciation, XVIII, 12.
Ai a nom (je), 424.
Aielle, 227.
Aigneau, 67.
Ai grant peché (je), 427.
Aigrure, 216.
Aiguier, 217.
Aillieurs, 818.

A lenuiron, 794.
A leslite, 628.
Alesne, 216.
A lespée traicte, 845.
Alicte (je me), 610.
Alien, 194.
Aliette, 269.
Allecte (je), 771.
Allons men, 746.
Almoires, 194.
Aloigne (je me), 512.
Alone (je), 435.
Alose (je), 489.
Aloue (je), 624.

Amolie (je), 629.
Amoneste (je), 635.
Amonstre (je), 717.
Amonte (je), 428, 485.
Amoureux, 305.
Amors, 196.
Amors (je), 439, 574.
Amors (je), 574.
Amorse, 290.
Amorse (je), 443.
Amortis (je), 469.
Amourée, 290.
Amourescher, 762.
Ampliez, 409.

Page 1084

Amplitude, 237.
Amuselle (je), 642.
Amy, 819.
Amyableté, 189.
Amygnonne (je me), 776.
Anathematize (je), 505.
Ancelle, 241.
Ancestes, 182, 257.
Anet, 215.
Angelin, 305.
Anglesche, 217.
Anglet, 240.
Angoysse (je), 432.
Angoisseuseté, 194.
Angoisseux, 305.
Anhele (je), 652.
Anichile (je), 432.
Anneantis (je), 495.
Annel, 263.
Annuicte (il), 412.
Anomal; Verbe anomal, pages
XXX, XXXV.
Ante, 196.
Anticipe (je), 562.
Antiesme, 194, 279.
Antonnoyr, 221.
Anuyte (il), 528.
Aoure (je), 587, 784.
Aourner, 417.
Aourse (je), 460.
Apaillardis (je), 570.
Apairie (je), 633.
A par, 795.
Aparance, 194.
Aparant, 64.
Aparcoys (je), 437.
Apare (je), 628.
A par moy, 508, 540, 833.
Apastelle (je), 547.
A paynes, 836.
Apeisement, 276.
Apellance, 202.
Apers (je); irrégularités de ce
verbe, 104.
Apert, 322.
Apertement, 642.
Apertise, 641.

A plaisance, 590.
Aplane (je), 628.
Aplanoie (je), 626.
Aplanois (je), 659.
A playn, 835.
Aport, 277.
Aposte (je), 459.
Apostume (je), 548, 679.
Apothecaire, 187.
Apothecayre, 194.
A pou que, 522, 771.
Apouris (je), 532.
Apouris (je me), 503.
Appaillardis (je me), 563.
Appalis (je), 432.
Apparant, 64.
Appareil, 206.
Appareille (je), 433.
Apparissoye (je), 787.
Appars (je), 787.
Appellance, 247.
Appence (je me), 453.
Appencement, 280.
Appendence, 257.
Appens (je), 448.
Appensement, 198.
Appent, p. XLVIII.
Apperceuance, 253.
Appertise, 242.
Appete (je), 434.
Appetisis (je), 773.
Appette (je), 616.
Applanie (je), 480.
Applicque (je), 434, 577.
Applicque (je), 577.
Appligne (je), 740.
Appoincte (je), 434.
Appointement, 241.
Apposte (je), 669.
Appourrys (je), 548.
Appoynt, 828.
Apprent, p. XLVIII.
Apprentis, 51.
Apprentisse, 258.
Appresse (je), 603, 665.
Appreue (je), 435.
Apprime (je), 645.

Apprise (je), 540.
Approucher, 109.
Appuial, 238.
Apreste loreille (je), 565.
Aprestz, 242.
Apries, 64.
Aprime (je), 466.
Aprise (je), 664.
Aprisonne (je), 746.
Apriué (je), 630.
A priué, 838.
Aproprie (je), 435.
Aprouche (je), 435.
Apte (je), 435.
Apuril, 194.
Aputaine (je), 570.
Apuye, 259.
Aquaire, 194.
Arable (je), 562.
Araigne, 274.
Araignie, 274.
Arain, 200.
Araisonne (je), 636.
Arbitre (je), 435.
Arbitrement, 195.
Arcbalestre, 211.
Arcbalestrier, 211.
Arcenic, 195.
Arche, 205.
Arche (je), 435.
Archediacre, 195.
Archeduc, 195.
Archeduché, 195,
Archée, 200.
Archelet, 240.
Archeprestre, 195.
Arcise, 307.
Arcte (je), 738.
Arctiller, 200.
Arcure, 197.
Ardans, 61.
Ardant, 307.
Ardille (je), 507, 660.
Ardure, 202.
Are (je), 539.
A recelé, 841.
Areneux, 314.

Page 1085

Aresté, 324.
Argue (je me), 545.
Armature, 195.
Armigere, 229.
Armonicque, 318.
Armonie, 229.
Armoye (je), 436.

A semblance de, 839.
Asne, 155.
Asnesse, 155.
Aspergoyr, 228.
Aspicq, 195.
Aspre, 54.
Asprement, 733.

Assouldre, 35, 672.
Assouls (je), 415.
Assouuis (je), 496.
Assouuys (je), 568.
Assubjecte (je), 467.
Assumpte (je), 751.
Assurement, 195.

Arne, 307.
Arne (je), 465.
Arogance, 258.
Aronde, 278.
Aronnelle, 278.
Arondis (je), 628.
Arpilleux, 322.
Arquemie, 193.
Arrable (je), 679.
Arraignée, 216.
Arrange (je), 678.
Arrase (je), 452.
Arraye (je), 678.
Arre, 175.
Arrengé (je), 647.
Arrengie (je), 686.
Arreste, 308.
Arriere de, 874.
Arrigateur, 215.
Arrouser, 23.
Arrousouer, 287.
Arroute (je), 438.
Arroutte (je me), 618.
Arroydys (je), 630.
Ars (je), 460.
Arsenicq, 195.
Arson, 264.
Arterique, 324.
Article (je), 437.
Articles; deux, *ung et le*, xxiv, 65, 152.
Articque, 248.
Artifie (je), 619.
Artillier, 221.
Arudy (je), 629.
A saoul, 836.
A scauoyr mon si, 142, 886.
Ascens (je), 438.
Aschayrne (je), 416.
Aschieue (je), 416.

Aspresse, 198.
Assagys (je me), 778.
Assaier, 416.
Assaisonne (je), 673, 710.
Assaulx (je), 395.
Assauuagys (je), 631.
Assauuagys (je me), 778.
Assauoyr, 783.
Assaygis (je), 773.
Assaysonne (je), 707.
Asseant, 270, 308.
Asseiche (je), 528.
Assene (je), 585.
Assens (je), 782.
Assens (je me), 438.
Assentis (je), 782.
Assendent, 270.
Assers (je), 467.
Assertayne (je), 438.
Asseule (je), 608.
Asseur, 418, 838.
Assurance, 270.
Asseuré, 326.
Assez plus que trop, 855.
Assie (je), 658.
Assiege (je me), 689.
Assiete, 270.
Assigne (je), 438.
Assistance, 278.
Assistent, 195.
Assomme (je me), 643.
Assopis (je), 568.
Assorber, 30.
Assorbis (je), 529.
Assorbys (je), 744.
Assorte (je), 673.
Assotis (je), 623.
Assotte (je), 467, 630.
Assotte (je me), 553.
Assouagist, 396.

Assys (je), 658.
Astelle (je), 579.
Asteure, 36, 142.
Astillier, 286.
Astraings (je), 495.
Astre, 229.
Astrologien, 195.
Astronmien, 195.
Astruse (je), 665.
Astruser, 36.
Astrusse (je), 755.
Atache, 279.
Ataiche, 201.
A talent, 832.
Atant, 808.
A tard, 814.
Atat, 149, 888.
Atellée, 279.
Ateyde (je), 625.
Aticie (je), 669.
Atise (je), 635.
A tousjours mays, 645.
Atrappe, 272.
Atrempance, 279.
Attaue, 227.
Attayne, 217.
Attayne (je), 765.
Attayneux, 319.
Attayngs (je), 439.
Attediacion, 235.
Attemperance, 279.
Attempte (je), 439.
Attendance, 195.
Attenué (je), 440.
Atterre (je), 449.
Attourne (je), 440.
Attourne (je me), 434.
Attrament, 199.
Attrays (je), 528, 669.
Atrempance, 360.

Page 1086

Attrempe (je), 420, 630, 634.
Attrepé, 327.
Atyce (je), 537.
Au; sa prononciation, p. xviii, 14.
Aube creuant, 201.
Aubespain, 216.
Aubin, 288.
Au bout damont, 817.
Aucteur, p. xviii.
Auctorise (je), 440.
Auctorité, auctorisation, etc. 195.
Au departyr, 804.
Au derrayn, 805.
Au dessur, 822.
Auditoir, 210.
Au fin fons, 827.
Au finissement, 805.
Augorisme, 196.
Au jour assis, 805.
Aulcun peu, 851.
Aulbergon, 229.
Aulcun, p. xxix, 82.
Aulcunefoys, 142.
Aulfin, 194.
Aulmaire, 196.
Aulmoires, 182.
Aulmosne, 94, 173.
Aulmosnier, 194.
Aulne, 216.

Aurien, 317.
Auriflame, 172.
Aurillon, 257.
Ausé, 506.
Au soleil absconsant, 806.
Aussi bien comme, 874.
Austruche, 233.
Autant comme, 848.
Autel, tel, 82, 365.
Autentique, 305.
Auton, 229.
Autumpne, 229.
Aual, 815.
Auale (je), 440.
Auale (je me), 531.
Auant danceur, 238.
Auant mure (je), 440.
Auant quon scayt tourner la mayn, 804.
Auec ce, 878.
Auecques, 4.
Aueleine, 227.
Auenture (je), 440.
Auere (je), 623.
Aueuglerie, 199.
Aueuglis (je), 620.
Auilement, 214.
Auilene (je), 12, 519.
Auille (je), 765.
Auine (je), 468.
Avint, 64.

Ayns, p. xlviii.
Ayns que, 812.
Ayre (je), 419.
Ayse (je), 531, 715.
Aysie (je), 716.
Ayt (me), 393.
Azart, 229.
Azurin, 306.

B

B; sa prononciation, 26. --Ne termine jamais un nom adjectif singulier masculin, p. xxvii, xxviii.
Babeure, 288.
Babillant, 305.
Bahoye (je), 456.
Baboye (je), 545.
Bacon, 196.
Bagogue, 188.
Baguenaulde, 244.
Bahus, 19.
Baille a congnoistre (je), 524.
Baille du pire (je), 676.
Baille honte (je), 619.
Baille paour (je), 547.
Baing, 196.
Bale, 196.
Balé, 170.
Balenchoeres, 282.
Balengier, 196.

Aulne (je), 635.
Au long aller, 805.
Aultre, p. xlviij.
Aultres foyz, 803.
Aune (je), 627.
Aüner, 11, 14.
Aunon, 228.
Au paraller, 837.
Au plus parfond, 819.
Au premier, 805.
Au primes, 805.
Au pris de, 837.
Aure (je), 499.
Auré, 226.
Au regard de, 837.
Au residu, 852.

Auironne (je), 694.
Auisse (je), 609.
Auisement, 195.
Auoistre, 193.
Auortin, 205.
Auortyne, 11.
Auost, 10, 55.
Auoue (je), 441.
Auoyé, 580.
Auoyr, conjugaison du verbe
auoyr, 107.
Ay cure (je), 475.
Ay faulte (je), 543.
Ay le vava (je), 731.
Ayncoys que, 812.
Aynesse, 249.

Balerie, 212.
Balle (je), 507, 720, 763.
Ballonette (je), 760.
Balloye (je), 745.
Ballye (je), 745.
Bambelottier, 201.
Bancquet, 235.
Bande (je me), 748.
Bancquette (je), 443.
Banerolle, 253.
Baniere (je), 671.
Baguaige, 196.
Baptisme, 172.
Baratier, 213.
Barbedieu, 221.

Page 1087

Barbele (je), 443.
Barbeu, 15.
Barboille (je), 549.
Barboyllement, 272.
Barat, 213.
Barc, 219.
Barde (je), 443.
Barette, 202.
Bargayne (je), 617.
Bargeret, 236.
Bargeronneste, 266.
Barnaige, 207.
Barocquin, 226.
Barratte (je), 446.
Bas (je), 87.
Basine, 283.
Basle (je), 458.
Basset, 317.
Basseur, 241.
Bastier, 223.
Bastille, 277.
Bastille (je), 532.
Bastillon, 8.
Baston, 275.
Bastys (je), 442.
Bataillereux, 310.
Batelleur, 234.
Batre, 26.
Battouer, 197.
Battouer, 287.
Batz, 250.
Baubeurre, 175.
Baubyoyant, 788.
Baudis (je), 461, 532.
Baudrier, 242.
Bauerresse, 215.
Baufre, 247.
Bauldray, 401.
Baulieure, 239.
Baulsme, 172, 197.
Baulpré, 264.
Beatifie (je), 620.
Beaufroy, 197.
Beaulté, 4.
Beaultifie (je), 444.
Becq, 301.
Becq de faulcon, 69.

Becqu, 301.
Becquasse, 694.
Bedon, 215.
Bée (je), 560.
Beer, 5.
Beguyne, 198.
Behourdis, 199.
Behours, 19.
Belances, 182.
Belisteresse, 155.
Belistre, 68.
Belistre (je), 446.
Belistresse, 68.
Bellement, 835.
Bellet, 303.
Bellette, 288.
Bellicq, 303.
Bellin, 197.
Bendayge, 188.
Bende, 198.
Bende (je), 560.
Benet, 220.
Benign, 306.
Beniuolence, 197.
Benoist, 306.
Benoistier, 228.
Bercelet, 872.
Berguygne (je), 443.
Beril, 197.
Bernac, 197.
Bernago, 283.
Bers, 210.
Bersault, 178, 189, 260.
Berse (je), 692.
Berseau, 210.
Besache, 286.
Besane, 274.
Besasse, 286.
Bescousse, 198.
Besgu, 742.
Besgue, 277.
Besgue (je), 732.
Besle (je), 458.
Besoigne (je), 600.
Besoigne (il), 147.
Beste, 54.
Besterie, 197.

Bestourne (je), 421.
Bestournement, 278.
Betreche (je), 713.
Betresche (je), 436.
Beugle, 201.
Beurette, 204.
Beuryau, 11.
Bichet, 231.
Bidault, 285.
Bidaulx, 277.
Bien a droyt, 843.
Bieneureux, 313.
Bieneure, 306.
Bieneuré, 306.
Bien euré, 329.
Bieneureté, 663.
Bieneureux, 306.
Bienheureté, 222.
Bienuiegner, 109.
Bienuiengne (je), 779.
Bienuueillance, 226.
Bigarre (je), 482.
Biguarrure, 246.
Bigne, 236.
Bigorneau, 253.
Biliart, 8.
Biquoquet, 253.
Bisexte, 238.
Bissine, 259.
Bistocque (je), 36, 589.
Bieure, 198.
Blanc esterlin, 275.
Blanchet, 253.
Blanchir, 431.
Blanchisseure, 252.
Blandice, 220.
Blandis (je), 456.
Blasme, 172.
Blasonne (je), 664.
Blasphemeur, 198.
Blece (je), 513.
Blesme, 306.
Blisterie, 197.
Blistreux, 305.
Bloucque (je), 459.
Blouque, 199, 201.
Blouquier, 199.

Page 1088

Bobancier, 193, 210.
Bobant, 256.
Bobin, 199.
Bocquage, 9.
Bocquillon, 289.

Boundys (je), 680.
Bourcée, 277.
Bourcettes, 228.
Bourcier, 259.
Bourde, 266.

Brand de Judas, 223.
Brandureau, 199.
Bransle, 275.
Bransle (je), 693.
Brase, 229.

Boe, 272.
Boiselier, 284.
Bombance, 284.
Bon, 236, 245.
Bondeau, 199, 202.
Bondel, 202.
Bondes, 438.
Bonet, xl.
Boneur, 166.
Bonnaire, 160.
Bonne erre, 829.
Bonne piece, 144, 853.
Bonnin, 317.
Bont, 261.
Bon vespre, 867.
Borache, 199.
Bort, 230.
Boscaige, 280.
Botteau, 200.
Botelle (je), 620.
Botelletes, 356.
Boubans, 263.
Boubette, 288.
Bouclettes, 281.
Boucle (je), 472.
Boucque, 247.
Boucquet, 248.
Boucquette (je), 472.
Boudayn, 259.
Boue, 463.
Boueau, 277.
Bouffe (je), 459.
Bouffée, 205.
Boufflée, 259.
Bougée, 270.
Bougueram, 199.
Bouille, 251.
Bouils (je), 459.
Boulengier, 186.
Boulle (je), 446, 462, 670.
Boulliau, 198.
Boully, 238.

Bourde (je), 460, 562.
Bourde (je me), 462.
Bourdeau, 199.
Bourdican, 239.
Bourdin, 216.
Boure, 200.
Bourgeois, 30.
Bourgeoisie, 275.
Bourgon, 30.
Bourgonne (je), 472.
Bourjon, 11.
Bourne, 200, 217.
Bourset, 222.
Boursette, 206.
Bous, 276.
Bousseu, 15.
Boutailier, 202.
Boutaillis, 164.
Boute (je), 732.
Boute hors (je), 705.
Bouteillis, 199.
Boutellier, 200.
Bouterolle, 204, 480.
Bouticle, 171, 267.
Boutiliere, 279.
Boyée, 199.
Boyllon, 244.
Bo[=y]s, 12.
Boys dautant (je), 529.
Boytelette, 187.
Boytte, 283.
Bo[=y]x, 14, 200.
Brace, 200.
Brachet, 200.
Bracquemart, 229.
Braggarde, 155.
Braggart, 155, 234.
Braggue (je), 589.
Brague, 306.
Braierie, 210.
Braitte, 206.
Branche (je), 611.

Brasier, 242.
Brasselet, 200.
Braye, 200.
Braye (je), 501, 732.
Brayes, 182.
Brays (je), 462.
Brebiette, 187.
Brehaing, 297.
Brehayng, 305.
Breif, 307.
Breneux, 306.
Bretif, 51.
Breze, 39, 205.
Brezil, 243.
Bribe (je), 465.
Briberie, 201.
Bribeur, 201.
Bricoteau, 206.
Bricque, 286.
Briesveté, 267.
Briffaut, 244.
Briffe (je), 540, 616.
Briffre, 227.
Brigandines, 251.
Brigue (je), 689.
Brise ma jeune (je), 464.
Briton, 242.
Broche (je), 516, 752.
Brocquart, 248.
Broderesse, 154.
Broillerie, 199.
Bronce (je), 762.
Broude (je), 463.
Brouée, 262.
Brouillas, 245.
Brouille (je), 595.
Brouticque, 246.
Brouyllas, 412.
Brunette, 319.
Brusles (tu), xli.
Bruste, 307.
Bruyte (je), 403.

Page 1089

Bryme, 265.
Bubette, 202, 287.
Bue (je), 472.
Buffée, 201.
Buffette (je), 472.
Bugle (je), 615.
Buisserie (je), 459.
Buissonnet, 796.
Bule (je), 614.
Bulte (je), 462.
Burjon, 200.
Burnys (je), 460.
Busine, 270.
Bussine, 286.
Butarin, 212, 216.
Butyne (je), 653.
Bygne, 223.

C

C; sa prononciation, 27.
Cabache, 222.
Cabaiche (je), 596.
Cabain, 202.
Cabestain, 257.
Cableau, 206.
Cacque, 236.
Cacquetteur, 198.
Cacquette (je), 473.
Caffignon, 254.

Canart, 215.
Cannart, 155.
Canneau, 247.
Cannette, 214.
Canneton, 214.
Cannonier, 226.
Cannyuet, 253.
Caquetteux, 307.
Car, 216.
Carcas, 260.
Carelleur, 262.
Carme, 202, 307.
Carniau, 263.
Carolle, 203.
Carpendu, 154.
Car pourquoy, 865.
Carquant, 197.
Carquas, 211.
Carrele (je), 488.
Cartal, 220.
Cas dans les pronoms, p. xxix, xxx, 77.
Casse (je), 675.
Casure, 218.
Casy, 311.
Catarre (la), 581.
Caterre, 257.
Catoille (il), 349.
Catouille (je), 758.

Ceingturier, 225.
Celée, 231.
Celément, 799.
Celerier, 203.
Celestialeté, 231.
Celestiel, 307.
Celestre, 315.
Celle part, 823.
Celique, 315.
Cemitiere, 174.
Cenciere, 262.
Cen dessus dessous, 764.
Cengle, 171, 224.
Cengle (je), 566.
Ce non obstant, 879.
Ceps, 280.
Ceptre, 203.
Cerance (je), 582.
Cercelle (je), 587.
Cercler, 778.
Cerclier, 287.
Cerfoil, 205.
Cerfouis (je), 516.
Cerimonie, 203.
Cerme, 207, 231.
Cerme (je), 707.
Certaineté, 203.
Certifie (je), 621.
Certiore (je), 479.

Cailliou, 221.
Caisier, 204.
Calamente, 232.
Calamint, 202.
Calculation, 209.
Calcule (je), 473.
Calefaction, 204.
Calendre, 288.
Calenge (je), 473, 687.
Calenge (je), 687.
Calfetre (je), 473.
Caliette, 228.
Calieu, 286.
Calion, 286.
Caliou, 202.
Camamille, 202.
Cambrant, 326.
Camfre, 176, 202.

Catulleux, 327.
Caulme, 307.
Cauque (je), 761.
Cautelle, 203.
Cautelle (je), 446.
Cautelleux, 305.
Causne, 835.
Causot, 256.
Cauillation, 248.
Caygnon, 231.
Cayndre, 28.
Ce et cest, 81.
Cedre, 269.
Ce fait mon, 866.
Ceinct, 225.
Ceincture, 225.
Ceincturette, 240.
Ceings (je), 566.

Cescy, 81.
Cesla, 81.
Cestela, 81.
Cestecy, 81.
Cest mon, 866.
Cestuy, 82.
Ceuetier, 621.
Ceyncture, 27.
Ch. Comment *ch* se prononce en français, 19. --Ne termine jamais un mot français, 20.
Chable, 202.
Chafrayn, 230.
Chagrineux, 307, 325.
Chaiere, 204.
Chaillist, 413.
Chaize, 34.
Chalant, 322.

Page 1090

Chaleme (je), 454.
Chalemeau, 240, 266.
Chalenge, 169, 202.
Chalenge (je), 480, 687.
Chalereux, 312.
Chaline, 215.
Challant, 204.
Chamahieux, 202.
Chamberette, 206.
Champagne, 796.
Champestre, 312.
Chamure, 176, 230.
Chancon, 28.
Chanconnette, 155.
Chandeille, 20.
Chaneu, 315.
Chanfrain, 204.
Chanse, 229.
Chanteau, 225.
Chantepelleuse, 274.
Chantepleure, 279.
Chanteresse, 290.
Chanterie, 204.
Chapele, 276.
Chapellet, 204.
Chapellys, 252.
Chapiau, 229.
Chappelain, 204.
Chappelle, 206, 276.
Chappelle (je), 484.
Chappelis, 205.
Chapplys, 205.
Charboncle, 157.
Charbonnée, 275.
Chardonnerau, 226.
Chareue, 256.
Charge (je), 601.
Chargeux, 307.
Chariage, 219.
Charie (je), 529.
Chariottier, 286.
Charlante, 156.
Charoigne, 8.
Charpente (je), 693.
Charpis (je), 694.
Charrecton, 203.
Charriere, 203.

Charriuaris, 268.
Charrurier, 256.
Chartée, 203, 240.
Charue, 256.
Chascun, xxix.
Chassie (je), 696.
Chassieux, 306.
Chassouer, 220.
Chastelayn, 235.
Chastereux, 224.
Chastité, 204.
Chastoiement, 204.
Chateuoison, 203.
Chathuan, 233.
Chatonne (je), 599.
Chatterment, 236.
Chatton pelleuse, 203.
Chatton, 251.
Chauce (je), 674.
Chaulde colle, 201, 223.
Chaulderon, 190.
Chaulderon de mer, 203.
Chaulderonnier, 281.
Chaulme, 263.
Chaulsist, 413.
Chault, 130.
Chaulue, 305.
Chaulueté, 197.
Chaulx, 166.
Chause, 560.
Chausée, 203.
Chausettier, 232.
Chayre, 34.
Chayrnure, 20.
Chefgros, 239.
Chenee, 228.
Chennu, 329.
Chereté, 238.
Cherue, 229.
Chestaigne, 204.
Chestaignier, 204.
Chesuble, 170.
Chetron, 281.
Cheute, 218.
Cheualereux, 302.
Cheualet, 155.
Cheualin, 294.

Cheuance, 263.
Cheuauche (je), 588.
Cheuecel, 199.
Cheuene, 205.
Cheuereau, 236.
Cheuereul, 155.
Cheueron, 260.
Cheuerotin, 205.
Cheuesance, 267.
Cheuestre, 228.
Cheuetain, 204.
Cheueul, 230.
Cheueulu, 301.
Cheuis (je), 520, 618.
Cheuisance, 205.
Chicheté, 248.
Chicquenode, 220.
Chicqueteux, 316.
Chicquette (je), 589.
Chicquette, 233.
Chief, chiefue, 325.
Chief deure, 270.
Chief gros, 268.
Chienin, 310.
Chiennaille, 207.
Chier, chiere, 310, 317.
Chiere, 55.
Chierté, 213.
Chiet, 62.
Chieure, 155, 226.
Chiminée, 205.
Chion, 241.
Chosette, 240.
Choysys (je), 437.
Choysys doeyl (je), 539.
Christÿen, 6.
Cie (je), 686.
Ciellement, 489.
Ciercle, 27, 203.
Ciffle (je), 585, 781.
Cifleure, 231.
Cigoigne, 272.
Cil, xlviii.
Cile (je), 479.
Cilement, 283.
Cincelle, 225.
Cinge, 194.

Page 1091

Cinquantainier, 372.
Circuition, 207.
Circule (je), 485.

Cochet (ung) au uent, xl.
Cocq, 155, 181.
Cocquart, 210.

Communalté, 207, 573.
Communicque (je), 490.
Communité, 207.

Circumbages, 207.
 Circumference, 250.
 Circumsicion, 205.
 Circumspection, 33.
 Circumstance, 205.
 Circumuiens (je), 508.
 Circumuoisin, 280.
 Circuys (je), 485.
 Cirurgien, 278.
 Cisterne, 203, 269.
 Ciue, 205.
 Ciuol, 205.
 Clacquet, 205.
 Claime (je), 485.
 Clame quitte (je me), 567.
 Clappier, 205.
 Claret, 307.
 Clendre, 327.
 Cler, 307.
 Clere, 49.
 Cleré, 49, 205.
 Clergie, 170.
 Clergise, 206.
 Cleron, 205, 283.
 Clichette, 229.
 Clicque (je), 726.
 Clicquetiere, 289.
 Clicquette, 206, 237, 604.
 Clignette (je), 764.
 Cline (je me), 578.
 Cliquette (je), 481, 486.
 Cliue(je), 461.
 Cliuité, 276.
 Clochant, 314.
 Cloche (je), 577.
 Clochier, 276.
 Clocque (je), 487.
 Cloistrier, 206.
 Clorre, 109.
 Clos le pas (je), 550.
 Closture, 206.
 Clouons (nous), 488.
 Coarcte (je), 488.
 Cocatris, 206.
 Cocquelourde, 207.
 Cocquet, 206, 237.
 Cocquyn, 188.
 Cocquynaille, 188.
 Coepelle (je), 484.
 Coessyn, 211.
 Coeste, 260.
 Cogitation, 280.
 Cogite (je), 453, 755.
 Cognoissance, 57.
 Cohertion, 208.
 Cohibe (je), 607.
 Coiche, 229.
 Coing, 209.
 Coint, 312.
 Cointerie, 248.
 Cointeux, 308.
 Cole, 207.
 Colée, 205.
 Colericq, 315.
 Coliege, 169, 207.
 Colier, 207.
 Colire, 174.
 Collegat, 219.
 Colomb, 27.
 Colombette, 254.
 Colompne, 254.
 Colubrin, 324.
 Columbier, 215.
 Columpne, 254.
 Colyn, 239.
 Combateur, 220.
 Combien que, 872.
 Combrance, 207.
 Comli, 308.
 Commande (je me), 489.
 Comme aynsi soyt, 884.
 Commedie, 207.
 Commendable, 308.
 Commentaire, 277.
 Comme poynt, 847.
 Commigne (je), 522.
 Commun; genre commun dans les noms substantifs, xxv; dans les noms adjectifs xxvii.
 Comodité, 207.
 Compaigne, 154.
 Compaignon, 154.
 Compaire (je), 529.
 Comparaison. Degrés de comparaison dans les adjectifs, xxviii, 71.
 Comparation, 207.
 Compare (je), 455.
 Comparison, 207.
 Comparoyr, 393.
 Compasse (je), 466.
 Compassible, 320.
 Compelle (je), 491.
 Compendieux, 308.
 Compete (il), 434.
 Complains (je me), 491.
 Complainz, 351.
 Composition, cinquième accident des noms, 68; --dans les pronoms, xxix.
 Compte, 279.
 Compte par ject (je), 477.
 Comyn, 207.
 Concele (je), 492.
 Concitation, 245.
 Conclave, 234.
 Concord, 207.
 Conculque (je), 761.
 Condamne (une), 279.
 Condampne (je), 506.
 Condempne (je), 493.
 Condescens (je me), 493.
 Condigne, 326.
 Conditionnel (mode), 85.
 Conduzt, 299.
 Conduycte, 208.
 Conestable, 208.
 Conestablée, 208.
 Confere (je), 466.
 Conferme (je me), 419.
 Confesse (une), 267.

Page 1092

Confite, 209, 278.
 Conflict, 220.
 Conforte (je), 483.
 Confrairie, 201.
 Confrication, 264.
 Confronte (je), 473.
 Confuge, 272.
 Confunde (je), 469.
 Confuse (je), 494.
 Congye, 170.
 Conin, 208.
 Conjoings (je), 494.
 Conjonctions: copulatives, disjonctives, continuatives, sub-continuatives, 148.
 Conjouys (je me), 683.
 Conjugaison: première, 88; seconde, 90; troisième, 93. --Trois conjugaisons du verbe actif, p. xxx.
 Conquesta (il), 161.
 Conqueste (je), 494.
 Conquesteur, 208.
 Consaulx, 182.
 Consequamment, 799.
 Consequens, 207.
 Contermine (je), 612.
 Conterquarre, 256.
 Conterquayre, 257.
 Contesse, 209.
 Conteur, 209.
 Contourne (je me), 453.
 Contraincte, 208.
 Contraintif, 308.
 Contrarieuseté, 208.
 Contrarieux, 308.
 Contrecueur, 196.
 Contredaigne (je), 519.
 Contredaing, 228.
 Contrediction, 224.
 Contrefaict, 308.
 Contrefaicture, 209.
 Contregarde (je), 509, 597.
 Contremaistre, 259.
 Contremont, 628.
 Contrepasse (je), 496.
 Contrepense (je), 755.
 Contreplaide (je), 500.
 Contrepoys, 209.
 Contrepoyse (je), 496.
 Contreueue, 239, 507.
 Contreyman, 209.
 Coquemert, 203.
 Coquine (je), 446.
 Coral, 208.
 Coralin, 308.
 Corbeillon, 229.
 Corbineau, 291.
 Cordaige, 68.
 Cordialleté, 229.
 Cordouanerie, 267.
 Cordouanier, 209.
 Corduain, 208.
 Corduainer, 208.
 Corlaire, 208.
 Cormerande, 155.
 Cormerant, 155.
 Cornardie, 221.
 Cornemusier, 196.
 Cornettier, 232.
 Cornille, 230.
 Corone, 209.
 Coronement, 209.
 Coronet, 274.
 Corporeau, 209.
 Corpsage, 198, 273.
 Corpset, 187.
 Corpsu, 292, 308.

Consergerie, 221.
 Consierge, 235.
 Consonnes; leur prononciation, 21. --Prononciation des consonnes quand il y en a plusieurs entre deux voyelles, xix, 23, 24.
 Constraint, 308.
 Constraintif, 313.
 Contamine (je), 509.
 Contant, 822.
 Conte, 157.
 Conté, 157, 209.
 Contempne (je), 496.
 Contempte (je), 421.
 Contenement, 208, 212.
 Contens, 208, 212.
 Contens (je), 421.
 Contente (je), 496.
 Contendue, 208.
 Contere (je), 471.
 Contribue (je), 497.
 Contristation, 231.
 Controuersie, 284.
 Contumelie, 213.
 Contumelieux, 310.
 Conturbation, 284.
 Convenance (je), 497.
 Conuenant, 207, 653.
 Conuerse (je), 582.
 Conuertée, convertie, xxxvii.
 Conuertissement, 190, 787.
 Conuertisseur, 189.
 Conuiens (je), 438.
 Conuole (je), 490.
 Conuoye (je), 468.
 Conuoyement, 208.
 Copeav, 211.
 Coppeau, 267.
 Coppie (je me) 694.
 Coquarde, 240.
 Coquatrix, 237.
 Corret, 193.
 Corroucer, 27.
 Corruppable, 308.
 Corsu, 301, 308.
 Coruscation, 239.
 Coste, 27, 49.
 Costée, 260.
 Costie (je), 499.
 Cotelle, 236.
 Cottie (je me), 674.
 Cotton, 209.
 Couardaylle, 188.
 Couche (je), 534.
 Coulde, 168.
 Couldeé, 211.
 Couleresse, 207.
 Couleurinier, 229.
 Coulomb, 215, 233.
 Couloure (je), 489.
 Coupable, 306.
 Coulper, 495.

Page 1093

Coultre, 211.
 Couoiteux, 308.
 Coupiau, 205.
 Couple (je), 499.
 Coupe, 211, 275.
 Coupe (je), 505.
 Coupeure, 211.
 Couraieur, 211.
 Couraige, xlviij.
 Couraigieux, 308.
 Courayeur, 208, 210.
 Courbe (je), 500.
 Couretier, 201.
 Courreur, 210.
 Courroye (je), 505.
 Courser, 217.
 Court (une), 164.
 Court. Faictes le court, 146.
 Courtault, 68.
 Courtaulx, 5.
 Courteur, 267.
 Courtil, 237.
 Courue (je), 502, 660.
 Courue (je me), 461.
 Cousevr, 273.
 Coustage, 209.
 Couste, 209, 262.
 Couste (je), 499.
 Cousteau, 236.
 Cousteillier, 210.
 Coustengeux, 308.
 Coustiere, 209.
 Coustomable, 309.
 Coustre, 281.
 Coustume, 211.
 Coustume (je), 500.
 Coustumier, 211.
 Coustumiere, 290.
 Coustumierement, 835.
 Cousturier, 68.
 Cousturiere, 68.
 Coustz, 209.
 Coutellier, 209.
 Couttepointier, 260.
 Couttepointe, 260.
 Couueleque, 209, 239.
 Couuertoir, 209, 232.
 Couuoitise, 209.
 Couureure, 280.
 Courier, 281.
 Couerleque, 236.
 Couert, 308.
 Couertevre, 221.
 Couient (il), 4.
 Coy, 308.
 Coychon, 254.
 Coyement, 839.
 Coyfue, 206.
 Coygnetz, 699.
 Coynctement, 841.
 Coypeav, 210.
 Coypelle (je), 757.
 Coyschon, 187.
 Coyschonnet, 187.
 Crachart, 249.
 Cracquelin, 210.
 Craings (je), 526.
 Craintiuité, 219.
 Cramosyn, 309.
 Cranequin, 210.
 Cravasse, 210.
 Craye (je), 480.
 Creante (je), 667.
 Credable, 330.
 Credo (la), 163.
 Creinu, 318.
 Cremeu, 311.
 Cremeur, 219.
 Cremilliere, 257.
 Creroye, 394.
 Cresay, 236.
 Cresme, 210.
 Cresmeau, 210.
 Crespe, 174, 231, 309.
 Crespe (je), 500.
 Crespeleux, 309.
 Crespelle (je), 502.
 Crespelleux, 307.
 Crespine, 173.
 Crespure, 211.
 Cressant, 210.
 Creste, 210.
 Cresy, 203.
 Creurent, 61.
 Creuseté, 232.
 Cricquet, 210.
 Crierie, 210.
 Crieue (je), 472, 675.
 Crine, 242.
 Crinet, 229.
 Crisolite, 210.
 Cristien, 6, 309.
 Cristienneté, 211.
 Cristoire, 225.
 Crochette, 211.
 Crochue (je), 502.
 Crochuseté, 231.
 Crocq, 211.
 Crocque (je), 500, 573.
 Crocque la pie (je), 780.
 Croissement, 234.
 Cronicques, 60.
 Croq, 221.
 Croquailles, 202.
 Crosle (je), 501, 677, 700.
 Crouliere, 260.
 Croulle (je), 502.
 Crouste, 211.
 Croÿoye, 11.
 Croyse (je me), 718.
 Croysée, 273.
 Croyst, 13.
 Cruauté, 54.
 Crudesse, 261.
 Crueur, 261.
 Crueux, 309.
 Cueils (je), 559.
 Cueilx (je), 560.
 Cueur, xlviij, 166.
 Cuidance, 280.
 Cuiderie, 280.
 Cuillier, 274.
 Cuisement, 235.
 Cuisettes, 266.
 Cuisseyn, 260.
 Cuisure, 271.
 Culpableté, 225.
 Cultieure, 237.
 Cultre, 266.
 Culuerine, 211.
 Curace, 251.

Page 1094

Cure (je), 504.
Curial, 309.
Curiosité, 211.
Curlieu, 211.
Curlis, 211.
Curre, 175, 204.
Custode, 202, 210.
Cuydereau, 876.
Cuyts (je), 716.
Cy, 818.
Cyens, 143, 818.
Cyrquite, 177.

D

D; sa prononciation, 28.
Dabondant, 851.
Daguet, 287.
Dalle, 209.
Damaige, 212.
Damars, 212.
Dammage, 9.
Dammaige, 266.
Dampnable, 525.
Dampnation, 212, 348.
Dance, 212.
Dancerie, 212.
Danceur, 212.
Dandelion, 212.
Dangereuseté, 212.
Dangiers, 60.
Darde (je), 657.
Dardoye (je), 506.
Dariolle, 211.
Dart, 21.
Dassez, 835.
Dassiette, 817.
Datté (un), 157.
Datte (je), 507.
Dautant, 848.
Day, 402.
De (beaucoup de peine, etc.),
xliii.
Dea, 149, 888.
Deambulatoire, 286.
Deannerie, 212.
Debelle (je), 742.
Debiffe (je), 552, 691.

De bon acquest, 844.
Debonaire, 309.
Debonairété, 226.
De bon eur, 835.
De bonne erre, 838.
Debout, 206.
Debranchis (je), 614.
De brief, 809.
Debrise (je), 471.
Debrise (je me), 553.
Debte, 213.
Debteur, 213.
Decede (je), 567.
Deceptif, 310.
Deceptif, 795.
Decesse, 309.
Decessé, 309.
Deceuable, 309.
Deceuableté, 213.
Deceuance, 212.
Deceueur, 212.
Deceueux, 309.
Dechasse (je), 481, 530.
Dechiet, 62.
Dechoys (je), 544.
Declaire (je me), 465.
Declaration, 212.
Declareur, 212.
Déclinaison, sixième accident
des noms, 69. --Dans les
pronoms, xxix. --De trois sortes,
pag. xxix, xxx. --Déclinaison
personnelle dans les temps des
verbes, pag. xxxii.
Décline, 212.
Decline (je), 461.
Decline (je me), 509.
Declicque (je), 615.
Decolle (je), 446.
Decoutre, 691.
Decourrable, 308.
Decours (je), 606.
Decouert, 319.
Decoys (je), 508.
Decrepitement, 234.
Decrepte, 281.
De demayn a demayn, 855.

Dedens, 824.
Deduis (je me), 724.
Deduit, 346.
Defaulte, 212.
Defaultz, 25.
Defectueux, 312.
Défectif. Verbe défectif, xxx,
xxxv.
Defence, 212.
Defensable, 309.
Defface (je), 458.
Deffaict, 213.
Deffaicte, 285.
Deffailance, 218.
Deffays (je me), 477.
Deffens (je), xli.
Defferme (je), 766,
Deffermure, 285.
Deffiance, 185.
Deffie (je), 509.
Deffinement, 217.
Defforme (je), 457.
Deffraye (je), 651.
Deffroye (je), 450.
Deffroysse (je), 471.
Defoule (je), 680, 761.
Defraude (je), 457.
Defunct, 212.
Degloutis (je), 744.
Degoyse (je), 482.
Deguerpis (je), 671.
Dehache (je), 484, 577.
Dehonter, 19.
Dehouser, 19.
Deificque, 314.
De jadis, 864.
Dejecte (je), 415, 477.
Dejointure, 290.
De la entour, 823.
Delaisse (je), 448,
Delation, 212.
Delaye (je), 510.
Delectableté, 212.
De legier, 835.
Deles, 817.
De les gier, 353.
Delez, 818.

Page 1095

Delibere (je me), 478.
Delicatte, 212.
Delicte, 282.
Delievre, 267.
Deliteux, 309.
Deliure, 317.
Deliverance, 212.
Delot, 220.
Delucide (je), 621.
Delude (je), 511.
Demaine, 240.
Demange (je), 540, 558.
Demangeure, 233.
Demarche (je), 685.
Demarie (je me), 512.
Demayne, 173.
Demene (je), 604.
Demeur, 159.
Demeurement, 841.
Demieté, 228.
Demion, 228.
Demolie (je), 452.
Demonstrable, 309.
Demonstrance, 267.

Deprecation, 197.
Deprede (je), 689.
Deprie (je), 451.
Deprime (je), 513, 665.
De prime face, 805.
De prinsault, 805.
Depriue (je), 513.
Depopule (je), 514.
Deporte (je me), 554.
Depourueoys (je), 646.
Depuisnagayres, 142.
Dérivation, quatrième accident
des noms substantifs, 68. --
Sixième accident des adjectifs,
73.
Deriue (je), 513.
Derogue (je), 415.
Deromps (je), 554.
Deronge (je), 456.
Desacoustume (je me), 517.
Desaduoue (je), 511.
Desafolle (je), 469.
Desahonte (je me), 776.
Desaloue (je), 517.

Desceille (je), 766.
Descendue, 226.
Descengle (je), 768.
Deschairne (je), 544.
Deschampe (je), 465, 768.
Descharne (je), 544.
Deschause (je me), 674.
Deschicquette (je), 589.
Deschire (je), 686.
Desclos (je), 518, 766.
Descocche (je), 615.
Descognoissance, 245.
Descombre (je), 766.
Descomfiture, 190.
Descomforte (je), 518.
Desconfeture, 213.
Desconfort, 213.
Desconfys (je), 518.
Descongnoys (je), 638.
Desconseille (je), 567.
Desconsolate (je), 518.
Descord, 214.
Descorde (je), 518.
Descosche (je), 768.

Demourance, 279.
Demourant, 262.
Demourroyt, 401.
Demyceinct, 212.
Demye douzaine, 859.
Denaire, 174.
Denieries, 478.
Denomme (je), 643.
Denoue (je), 739.
Denteux, 327.
Dentour, 815.
Denué (je), 442.
Denye (je), 511.
Depainctz, 63.
Depaings (je), 489.
De par Dieu, 837.
De parole (je), 727.
Depars (je), 512.
De pieca, 802.
De plante et de layct, 835.
De playn poyng, 845.
Deploration, 198, 273.
Depraue (je), 513.

Desaltere (je), 468, 522.
Desancre (je), 584.
Des anten, 854.
Desappointe (je), 521.
Desaprens (je), 556.
Desareste (je), 750.
Desaroy, 214.
Desarroye (je), 465.
Desassemble (je), 512.
Desassembler, 494.
Desatemperance, 214.
Desatrempe (je), 468, 522.
Desauctorise (je), 675.
Desauance (je), 517.
Desayse (je), 519.
Desbauche (je me), 516.
Desbaudis (je), 632.
Desbault, 214.
Desblasme (je), 541.
Desbloucque (je), 615.
Desboucle (je), 615.
Desbource (je), 517, 602.
Desbranchis (je), 759.

Descouche (je me), 692.
Descouloure (je), 518.
Descoupe (je), 589.
Descourue (je), 502.
Descouuers (je), 442.
Descrips (je), 513.
Descrist, 64.
Descrouste (je), 484.
Descroys (je), 509.
Desdaigneux, 310.
Desdaing, 51, 214
Desdeulx (je me), 609.
Desempare (je), 469.
Desemple (je), 532.
Desennuie (je), 433.
Desercion, 222.
Desers (je), 513.
Deserte (je), 670.
Desesperance, 214, 286.
Deseureté, 285.
Desfortune, 245.
Desgarnys (je), 519, 768.
Desgayne (je), 527.

Page 1096

Desgele (il), 130, 754.
Desgorge (je), 478.
Desgouste (je), 468.
Desguyse (je), 519.
Desharnesché, 328.
Deshonest, 139.
Deshoneste, 310.
Deshoneste (je), 519.
Deshonté, 504.
Deshonter, 30.
Deshormays, 143, 808.
Deshouser, 30.
Des incontinent que, 808.
Desirance, 202.
Desiste (je), 465.
Desjoings (je), 512.
Desjoynctz (je), 671.
Desjune (je), 463.
Deslasche (je), 608.
Deslie (je), 615.
Deslodge (je me), 685.
Desloge (je me), 512.
Deslogement, 285.
Desloiaulté, 249.
Deslorsenca, 28.
Deslors en auant, 863.
Desmarche (je me), 734.
Desmarcher, 62.
Desmays (je), 519.
Desmays (je me), 444.
Desmembre (je), 505.
Desmesle (je), 512, 653.
Desmesure (je), 372.
Desmesuree, 63.
Desmets (je), 519.
Desmonte (je), 768.
Desnature (je), 579.
Desnaturel, 280.
Desniche (je), 487.
Desnoue (je), 615.
Desole (je), 556.
De son playn vivant, 807.
Des or, 808.
Desordonnance, 245.
Desordre (je), 520, 638.
Desoreille (je), 505.
Des or mais, 808.

Desorte (je), 607.
Despans, 260, 269.
Despecer, 27.
Despendre, 139.
Despendu, 350.
Despens, 23, 214.
Despensateur, 202.
Despensation, 214.
Despere (je), 514.
Desperé, 425.
Despieca, 810.
Despitaine, 310.
Despite (je), 520.
Despiterie, 219.
Despiteuseté, 274.
Despiteux, 310.
Desplays (je), 521.
Desplaysir, 214.
Desploye (je), 520, 767.
Despoille, 274.
Despouruoys (je), 521.
Desprise (je), 521.
Despuis, 802.
Despuis Nouel en ca, 863.
Desrigne (je), 468.
Desrigne (je me), 572.
Desrobe (je), 514.
Desroute (je), 653.
Desroy, 245.
Desroye (je me), 734.
Desrue (je me), 570.
Dessaisie (je), 521.
Dessaisine (je), 521.
Desserre (je), 768.
Desseruir, 383.
Dessier, 213.
Dessire (je), 686.
Dessus, 794.
Destaings (je), 522.
Destains (je), 676.
Destigne (je), 523.
Destinable, 310.
Destine (je), 434.
Destitue (je), 556.
Destoubz estraine, 277.
Destoupe (je), 768.
Destour, 250.

Destourbe (je), 522.
Destourbier, 284.
Destourmier, 214.
Destraygns (je), 522.
Destrays (je), 669.
Destre (au), 144.
Destresse, 214.
Destribuer, 383.
Destroitiz, 63.
Destrousse, 279.
Destruys (je), 470, 514.
Destys (je), 647.
Desueloppe (je), 767.
Desuere, 243.
Desuergonde (je), 627
Desuerie, 261.
Desuoye (je), 467.
Detaingz lhuile (je), 551.
De tant, de tant, 852.
De tant plus, tant plus, 852.
Detecte (je), 454, 514.
Detection, 198.
Determinable, 310.
Determine (je), 534.
Determinement, 57.
Determineur, 213, 220.
De tout nifles, 850.
De tout en tout, 883.
Detracte (je), 443.
Detractoire, 310,
Detrayne (je), 760.
Detrenche (je), 505.
Detrier, 275.
Deturpe (je), 509.
Deuls (je me), 419.
Deureur, 280.
Deusiesme, 83.
Deuxiesme, 73.
Deuanthyer, 143.
Deuantcier, 222.
Deuide, 228.
Deuideresse, 281.
Deuidouer, 254.
Deuie (je), 508.
Deuination, 213.
Deuinement, 224.
Deuis, 385.

- Deuorce (je), 515.
 Deouore (je), 515.
 De vray, 835.
 Dextre, 23.
 Deyl, 280.
 Diaculum, 729.
 Diademe (je), 432.
 Dictee, 214.
 Dictie, 214.
 Dictie (je), 534, 655.
 Dictier, 214.
 Dictz, 25.
 Dicy en auant, 855.
 Dicy et desja, 811.
 Die (que je), 96.
 Diette, 213.
 Diffame, 172, 213.
 Diffamement, 213.
 Differe (je me), 515.
 Differre (je), 529.
 Difficulté, 229.
 Diffine (je), 510, 515, 618.
 Diffinissement, 213.
 Diffinition, 213.
 Difforme (je), 515.
 Diffuse, 310.
 Digne (je), 632.
 Digresse (je), 516.
 Dilate (je), 516.
 Diligente (je), 524.
 Dimanche de blanches, 251.
 Dime (je), 511.
 Dimenche, 278.
 Dimention, 244.
 Diminue (je), 510, 550.
 Disauantaige, 231.
 Discention, 213, 214.
 Discipline (je), 499.
 Disconfiture, 214.
 Discort, 214.
 Discouleure (je), 734.
 Diseteux, 319.
 Diseur, 504.
 Dishonneur, 214.
 Dishonneur, 166.
 Disme, 213, 279.
 Disme (je), 758.
- Disner, 213.
 Dispare (je), 36, 726.
 Dispars (je), 517.
 Disparse (je), 36, 520.
 Dispence (je), 520.
 Dispens, 182.
 Dispertion, 273.
 Dispriser, 350.
 Disputation, 214.
 Disraige (je), 697.
 Dissention, 277.
 Dissolue (je), 464.
 Dissolutione, 328.
 Dissonne (je me), 726.
 Distille (je), 530.
 Distincte (je), 36, 671.
 Distributifs. Noms distributifs, p. XXIX, 359.
 Diuturne, 317.
 Diuerseté, 214, 272.
 Diuersite (je me), 428.
 Diuertis (je me), 523.
 Diuide (je), 523.
 Diuine (je), 668.
 Diuineur, 273.
 Diurse, 175, 213.
 Diulger, 411.
 Diziesme, 60.
 Docque, 214.
 Docque (je), 707.
 Doctrine (je), 523.
 Dole (je me), 640.
 Dolle, 228.
 Dolouere, 193, 201.
 Domageux, 310.
 Domagyable, 310.
 Domesche, 326.
 Domesticque, 242.
 Domicille, 216.
 Dominateresse, 290.
 Dommagieux, 314.
 Dommaigiabile, 316.
 Donee, 214.
 Dongon, 30.
 Donne attendance (je), 564.
 Donne garde (je), 489.
 Donne le bont (je), 688.
- Donne lustre (je), 713.
 Donront, 401.
 Dorre (je), 499.
 Douaigièrre, 237.
 Double (je), 498.
 Double (je me), 525.
 Doubte, 26, 215.
 Doubte (je), 61, 528.
 Douen danten, 855.
 Douge (je), 762.
 Doulant, 60, 325.
 Doulcaines, 356.
 Doucement, 16.
 Doulcereux, 310.
 Doulçeté, 272.
 Doulcilocque, 218.
 Doulphin, 214, 223.
 Dousayne, 373.
 Doutance, 215, 275.
 Doy, 661.
 Doybs (je), XXXII, 650. --
 Conjugaison du verbe *debuoyr*, 106.
 Doynt, 393.
 Draconique, 311.
 Dracque, 215.
 Draggee, 203.
 Dragme, 215.
 Dramme, 215.
 Drappeur, 206.
 Dresseure, 215.
 Dressouer, 211.
 Drogges, 261.
 Droict, XLVIII, 311.
 Droicteur, 277.
 Dromedaire, 215.
 Druge, 215.
 Dubitation, 215.
 Dueil, 60, 272.
 Dueils (je me), 410,
 Duict, 312.
 Duise (je), 464.
 Duisible, 303.
 Duite (je), 464, 619.
 Duite (je), 619.
 Du long, 824.
 Dune (je), 659.

- Du possible, 831.
 Du surplus, 878.
 Du tract, 834.
 Duysant, 305.
 Dy, 97.
- E**
- E; sa prononciation, 3, 54. --
 Devant un *m* ou un *n*, XVII. --*E*
 final; sa prononciation, XXI, 41,
 42, 44, 45. --Dans *be*, *ce*, *de* et
 dans *el*, *em*, *en*, XXIII. --
 Terminaison de tous les
 adjectifs féminins, XXVII. --
 Figurative du *thème* de la
 première conjugaison des
 verbes actifs, XXXI.
 Easy, 311.
 Eaue, 11.
 Eaueux, 11, 329.
 Eauyer, 270.
 Eayge, 3, 63.
- Eclipse (je me), 699.
 Elebere, 216.
 Eliphant, 216.
 Elucidation, 212.
 Emancipe (je), 443.
 Embages, 226.
 Embaillonne (je), 559.
 Embas 139, 143, 825.
 Embassade, 216.
 Embats (je), 415.
 Embats (je me), 666.
 Embattonné, 452.
 Embesoigne (une), 306.
 Embesoigné, 306, 423.
 Embesoingne (je), 451.
 Emble (je), 734.
 Embler, 3.
 Embosse (je), 533.
 Embouche (je), 507.
 Emtouche (je), 736.
 Emboucheur, 279.
 Emboue (je), 435.
- Empouldre (je), 436.
 Empouldrer, 108.
 Empraignant, 321.
 Empraincte, 431.
 Empreings (je), 492.
 Emprens, 395.
 Empres de, 821.
 Empresse, 216.
 Empresse (je), 532.
 Emprime (je), 536.
 Emprimeur, 258.
 Emprinse, 217.
 Empropere (je), 603.
 Empugne (je), 590.
 Empunaise (je), 591.
 Empunaysis (je), 741.
 En, devant les verbes, *il sen est enfuy*, XLI; --*il sen est en allé*, *il sen est enfouy*, 110.
 Enamoure (je me), 425.
 Enbaultsme (je), 432.
 Enboce (je), 459.

Eayger, 3.
Eburnin, 330.
Ecche, 273.
Echaufoison, 229.
Effassable, 63.
Effection, XLVIII.
Effonce (je), 530.
Effondre (je me), 705.
Effons (je), 662.
Efforcé, 424.
Efforcement, 206, 207.
Efforcer, 747.
Effraieux, 305,
Effrene (je), 771.
Effronte (je), 559.
Effroydis(je), 498.
Effroye (je), 418.
Egripe, 228.
Ei, diphthongue; sa
prononciation, 13.
El, final dans les adjectifs,
devant un nom substantif
féminin, 43.

Emboys (je), 529.
Embrabile, 307.
Embrode (je), 472, 533.
Embronche (je me), 584.
Embrunche (je), 737.
Embuche (un), 167.
Emmarre (je), 477.
Emmeroides, 216.
Emmouffle (je), 489, 642.
Emmurer, 108.
Emmy, 819.
Emparente (je), 624.
Emparle, 312.
Emparlé, 329.
Emparque (je), 590.
Empenne (je), 547.
Empennon, 219.
Emperiere, 216.
Empesche, 305.
Empescheur, 238.
Empiece, 855.
Emplaistre, 255.
Emplastre (je), 697.
Employment, 198,
Emplume (je), 741.

En cambrant, 842.
En ce droyt lieu, 820.
Encendre (je), 436.
En ce taudis, 809,
Enceyngs (je), 127, 487.
Enchancre (je), 474.
Encharge (je), 481, 603.
Enchartre (je), 536.
Enchartrure, 234.
Encherge (je), 553.
Encherme (je), 533.
Encheuestre (je), 577.
Enchifre (je), 476.
Encire (je), 709.
Encise (je), 603.
Encline (je me), 461.
Enclos (je), 498.
Enclouche (je), 667.
Encolle (je), 676.
Encombreaux, 308.
Encontre, 241.
Encontrer, 570.
Encorne (je), 758.
Encoule (je), 721.
Encoulpe (je), 603, 783.

Page 1099

Encourtine (je), 479, 578.
En court tour, 841.
Encoyche (je), 644.
Encre (je), 729.
Encrocher, 478.
Encroissement, 216.
Encuse (je), 417.
Endammaige (je), 506.
Endebte (je), 467.
Endementiers, 3, 382.
Endentures, 183, 442.
Endosse (je), 534.
Endoue (je), 534.
En droit moy, 362.
Endroyt moy, 878.
En estant, 842.
En facon comme si, 838.
Enfant de cueur, 260.
Enfermerie, 219.
Enfermier, 235.
Enferre (je), 613, 739.
Enfille (je), 516.
Enfirme (je), 627.
Enfirmité, 269.
Enflaire (je), 722.
Enflambe (je), 534.
Enfleure (je), 666.
Enfollys (je), 773.
Enfondreure, 271.
Enforcement, 217.
Enforme (je), 534.
Enfrayns (je), 464.
Enfrene (je), 465.
Engaigne, 271, 289.
Engaigne (je), 676.
Engarde (je), 607.
En gast, 844.
Engelé, 426.
Engendreure, 68.
Engendrure, 190.
Engeronne (je), 506, 711.
Engigneur, 242.
Engloute (je), 786.
Engloutis (je), 487.
Engloutte (je), 568.
Englué (je), 535.

Engoulle (je), 576.
Engrandy, 428.
Engratie, 234.
Engrayne (je), 574.
Engrege (je), 533, 626, 776.
Engresse (je), 546.
Engressis (je me), 774.
Engrosse (je), 575.
Engrossye (je), 535.
Enguygne (je), 457.
Enguyne (je), 446.
Enhabite (je), 19, 535.
Enhanter, 19.
Enharnesche (je), 532.
Enhazarder, 19.
Enhort, 193.
Enhorte (je), 541.
Enhorter, 19.
Enhuyllé (je), 431.
En jars, 826.
En jeu, 838.
Enjoyngs (je), 536.
Enlace (je), 600.
Enlangaigé, 329.
En la parfin, 804, 808.
En la parfin, 808.
Enlargis (je), 536.
En louchet, 829.
Enlumine (je), 611.
En mal heure, 837.
En malle sepmayne, 709.
En mal poynt, 468.
Enmarre (je), 756.
Ennoue (je), 489.
Ennoyrcys (je me), 773, 774.
Ennuys, 828.
Ennuys (je me), 593.
Ennuyse (que je), 397.
Enordonné, 316.
En peu dheure, 809.
Enplumé, 774.
Enprennis (je), 746.
Enpresse (je), 665.
Enprisonne (je), 536.
Enpugne (je), 536.
Enquantelle (je), 657.

Enquisition, 234.
En quoy, 838.
Enrage (je me), 778.
Enragerie, 241.
Enraille (je), 457.
En recoy, 841.
Enresne (je), 678.
Enreue, 291.
Enriche (je), 537.
En riens quiconques, 849,
Enrimé, 582.
Enrolle (je), 537, 693.
Enrouche (je), 672.
Enroueure, 232.
Enrougis (je me), 55, 459, 776.
Enrouille (je me), 696.
Enrouilleure, 264.
Enrouillis (je), 560.
Enrouse (je), 445.
Ens, 819, 824.
Ensacque (je), 696.
En sauf, 838.
Enscise (je), 505, 604.
Enseigne, 306.
Enseigné, 306.
Enselle (je), 708.
Ensemble, 797.
Ensens, 203.
Ensensier, 203.
Enserche (je), 708.
Enserre (je), 613.
Enseuelir; conjugaison de ce
verbe, 103.
Ensigne, 203.
Ensoigne (je), 468.
Ensoulffre (je), 698.
Ensuiuis (je), 524.
Ensuyrs (je), 777.
Ensuyrs (je), 537.
Entache (je), 436.
Entaille (je), 679.
Entaings (je), 516.
Entalente (je), 564.
Entalentié, 430.
Entandis, 809.
Entendible, 318.

Page 1100

- Entens a (je), 564.
 Entent, XLVIII, 234.
 Entente, 800.
 Ententif, 299, 305.
 Entention, 234.
 Enterin, 315.
 Entese (je), 561.
 Enteyse (je), 526.
 Entiereté, 232.
 Entonne (je), 538.
 Entour, 802.
 Entoxique (je), 531, 592.
 Entoyse (je), 670.
 Entrechangement, 204.
 Entredent, 273.
 Entredys (je), 592.
 Entre en deuses (je), 550.
 Entrehabandonne (je), 556.
 Entre hantent (ils se), 425.
 Entrelaisse (je), 556.
 Entrelasse (je), 462.
 Entremescorde (je), 519.
 Entremetteux, 306, 676.
 Entremy, 816.
 Entreneu, 236.
 Entreneue, 250.
 Entreprenneurs, 61.
 Entreromps (je), 592.
 Entresayn, 239.
 Entresourcil, 273.
 Entrespaule, 273.
 Entretaille (je), 476, 700.
 Entretant que, 809.
 Entretencés, 483.
 Entretienement, 234.
 Entrhabitcr, 140.
 Entroeyl, 138.
 Entrosne (je), 732.
 Enuyce, 241.
 Enuyeseté, 235.
 Enuyt (il me), 593.
 Enueillys (je me), 543.
 Enueillys (je), 627.
 Enuolue (je), 537, 538.
 Enuoye, 269, 816.
 Enuoyrine (je), 535.
 Enacte (je), 532.
- Epaisseur, 280.
 Epidimie, 253.
 Epistolier, 217.
 Epistre, 23.
 Égalité, 217.
 Equiperation, 217.
 Equipollance, 216.
 Equipolle (je), 425.
 Equivalence, 217.
 Erre, 287.
 Es, quelquefois terminaison de la première personne du pluriel dans les verbes, page XXXIII.
 Es, 60, 141, 819.
 Esbahys (je me), conjugaison de ce verbe, 117.
 Esbanoy, 267.
 Esbas (je me), 521.
 Esbatement, 252, 383.
 Esbaudis (je), 461.
 Esbaudis (je me), 773.
 Esberlue (je), 507.
 Esbeurre (je), 551.
 Escache, 276.
 Escade, 202.
 Escaille, 233.
 Escale, 265.
 Escalerie, 265.
 Escalie (je), 699.
 Escalure, 229.
 Escarceur, 265.
 Escarlatte, 265.
 Escarmouche (je), 699.
 Escarmuche, 271.
 Escarquylle (je me), 738.
 Escarte (je), 520.
 Escerueillons, 350.
 Esceruelle (je), 462.
 Eschafiture, 231.
 Eschallier, 276.
 Eschampignon, 281.
 Eschange, 169.
 Eschanson, 211.
 Eschantillon, 265.
 Eschappe (je), 441.
 Escharboncle, 198, 203.
- Escharcete, 266.
 Escharfault, 265.
 Escharme, 272.
 Eschars, 323.
 Eschaude, 288.
 Eschauffe (je), 479.
 Eschauffette, 203.
 Eschauffeture, 204.
 Eschauffoison, 204.
 Eschaulde (je), 699.
 Eschauldé, 50, 168.
 Eschecquier, 204.
 Eschelle (je), 699.
 Eschellon, 265.
 Escheue (je), 441.
 Escheueau, 271.
 Eschié, 425.
 Eschiecz, 255.
 Eschiel, 237.
 Eschieue (je), 438.
 Esclamme, 284.
 Esclande, 168.
 Esclandre (je), 720.
 Esclarcys (je me), 486.
 Esclat, 274.
 Esclendre, 323.
 Escler, 225.
 Esclercis (je), 621.
 Esclere (il), 130, 609.
 Esclerement, 225.
 Esclisse (je), 731.
 Esclipse (je), 531.
 Escloy, 254, 275.
 Esclou, 258.
 Escluse, 212, 221.
 Escole, 22, 268.
 Escolier, 268.
 Escolte (je), 531.
 Escomuniment, 211.
 Escondict, 213.
 Escondis (je), 511, 697.
 Escondisseur, 212.
 Escons (je), 584.
 Escorce, 233.
 Escorche, 263.
 Escorpion, 36, 165.
 Escosse, 233.

Page 1101

- Escot, 241.
 Escoue (je), 700.
 Escoufle, 171.
 Escouille (je), 505.
 Escoult, 221.
 Escoupelle (je), 759.
 Escourge (je), 707.
 Escourgez, 182.
 Escout, 229.
 Escoute, 229, 266.
 Escoux (je), 479.
 Escoysoys, 268.
 Escrayn, 228.
 Escreuice, 201.
 Escrie (je me), 501.
 Escripre, 22.
 Escripteau, 268.
 Escriptoyres, 182.
 Escripuayn, 187.
 Escrobe (je), 704.
- Esloyngne (je), 108, 415.
 Esluys (je), 498.
 Eslys (je), 483.
 Esmael, 194.
 Esmaile (je), 425.
 Esmaillure, 194.
 Esmayé, 405.
 Esme, 172, 196.
 Esme (je), 419.
 Esmeraulde, 216.
 Esmerueillable, 884.
 Esmolu, 228.
 Esmolument, 224.
 Esmouement, 286.
 Esmoue (je me), 427.
 Esmoy, 214.
 Esmye (je), 501.
 Espace (la), 349.
 Espagne, 36.
 Espalleron, 251.
- Espirituel, 314.
 Esprituelleté, 226.
 Esplang, 271.
 Esplene, 274.
 Esplinguette, 254.
 Esplinguier, 203.
 Esplinguier, 203.
 Esplinguere, 254.
 Esplouche (je), 699.
 Esploure (je), 453.
 Esplouré, 324.
 Espouge, 274.
 Espourge, 274.
 Espourgement, 257.
 Espouser, 44.
 Espouenteusement, 836.
 Espouentable, 312.
 Espoventail, 265.
 Espreuue, 177, 257.
 Espreuiet, 273.

Escrole (je), 700.
Escruelles, 260.
Escry, 264, 267.
Escrye, 271.
Escu, 22, 211.
Escuelle, 214.
Escuireau, 275.
Escuisson, 200.
Escume, 268.
Escume de saulmon, 202.
Escumette, 268.
Escure (je), 486, 548, 706.
Escureul, 275.
Esgart, 240.
Esgarys (je me), 562.
Esgaudis (je), 483.
Esguilletier, 256.
Esguillette, 256.
Esguillon, 223.
Esguissouere, 275.
Eshonter, 30.
Esjouys (je me), 535, 683.
Eslargis (je), 529.
Esle, 172.
Esleu, 249.
Esleue, 57.
Eslonguer, 218.

Esparcis (je), 653.
Espargoutte, 219.
Espars (je), 726.
Espaule, 267.
Espaultre (je), 757.
Espaume, 273.
Espaume (je me), 543.
Espaumure, 278.
Espaumyt (il se), 417.
Especial, 36, 297, 311.
Especialleté, 274.
Espée, 22.
Espergne, 282.
Espergne (je), 726.
Esperon, 274.
Esperonnier, 274.
Espes, 294, 327.
Espessis (je), 741.
Espices, 274.
Espie (je), 524.
Espier, 275.
Espinars, 274.
Espinces, 198.
Espine, 154.
Espinettes, 659.
Espingue (je), 730.
Espirit, 22, 226.

Espuisment, 215.
Espurge (je), 729.
Espy, 217.
Espye, 274.
Esquaille, 266.
Esquarre (je), 731.
Esquarquille (je me), 733.
Esquarquillez, 457.
Esquierre, 275.
Esquippaige, 279.
Esquippe (je), 558.
Esrache (je), 670.
Esseme (je me), 745.
Essiant, 289.
Essoine, 218.
Estable, 22, 170, 275, 325.
Estable (je), 673.
Estableté, 275.
Etablissement, 275.
Estache, 254.
Estade, 168, 222.
Estaige, 240.
Estaings (je), 525.
Estal, 253, 275, 732.
Estalleure, 278.
Estamine, 275.
Estanche, 325.

Page 1102

Estanchonne (je), 767.
Estancon, 275.
Estandart, 275.
Estant, 322.
Estaple, 275.
Estardir, 853.
Estat, 275.
Estatut, 296.
Estatute, 275.
Estaye, 259.
Estayngs (je), 674.
Esté, 50.
Estens (je), 542.
Esterne (je), 644.
Esternuement, 247.
Esteuue (je), 735.
Esteuues, 182, 232.
Esticquette, 206.
Estincelle, 273.
Estocque (je), 735.
Estoffe, 277.
Estoille, 22, 275.
Estolle, 276.
Estomach, 20.
Estomachier, 276.
Estonnissement, 193.
Estorte (je), 785.
Estouble, 277.
Estouffe (je), 741.
Estouillon, 218.
Estoupayl, 276.
Estoupeau, 276.
Esloupe (je), 552.
Estour, 282, 286.
Estourdisseure, 277.
Estourgion, 165.
Estradiot, 36.
Estrains (je), 575.
Estranc, 268.
Estrane, 271.
Estrange, 380.
Estrange (je me), 540.
Estrangerie, 277.
Estrangier, 277.

Estrayndre, 22.
Estrayne, 229.
Estrene (je), 578.
Estreisseur, 247.
Estricquaires, 182.
Estrier, 276.
Estrif, 277.
Estriquaires, 251.
Estruie (je me), 508.
Estruie a lestruiee, 277.
Estruie, 277.
Estruier, 276.
Estruieres, 376.
Estron, 214.
Estroysse (je), 738.
Estroysseur, 277.
Estude, 276.
Estudiant, 277.
Estudier, 22.
Esturgion, 277.
Estuuier, 232.
Estuy, 235.
Esueille (je me), 441.
Esueiller, 287.
Esuertue (je me), 434.
Etains (je), 648.
Et par aynsi, 873.
Et par quoy, 873.
Erige (je), 436.
Eu, diphthongue; sa prononciation, 14; --à la fin des mots, 15.
Eulx, 44.
Enr, 342.
Eure (je), 540.
Eureuseté, 229.
Eureux, 15, 61.
Euangille (un ou une), 160; au pluriel toujours du féminin, 161.
Euerse (je), 540.
Euesché, 50.
Euesque, 9.
Euissant, 217.
Exalce (je), 540.

Excede (je), 653.
Excelse, 318.
Exchange (je), 541.
Exclos (je), 541.
Escommenge, 218.
Excusation, 218.
Exemplifie (je), 541.
Exercitation, 218.
Exercite, 162.
Exercite (je me), 541.
Expecte (je), 542.
Expences, 218.
Experiment, 218.
Exploicte (je), 434.
Exposeur, 212, 218.
Expositeur, 218.
Expresse (je), 542.
Expurge (je), 542.
Extermine (je), 523.
Extorce, 218.
Extortionne (je), 542.
Exultation, 225.
Ez, terminaison de la seconde personne du pluriel dans les verbes, XXXIII.

F

F, sa prononciation, 29.
Face (que je), 96. --
Conjugaison du verbe *faire*, 97.
Facer, 234.
Fachieux, 310.
Facil, 311.
Facion, 665.
Facteur, 243.
Factise, 258.
Facund, 311.
Facundité, 216.
Facyon, 242
Fade (je), 541.
Faée, 219, 306.
Faguenet, 722.
Faiche (il me), 593
Faictez, 659.

Estrangis (je me), 777.
Estrangle (je), 484.
Estranguillon, 154, 205,

Exalse (je), 582.
Examination, 217.

Faictes paix, 587.
Faictisse, 258.
Faicty, 312.

Page 1103

Faictz, 25.
Faille, 218.
Fain, 185.
Faincte, 219.
Fainctif, 312.
Faingdrent (ils), 397.
Faings (je), 543.
Faintif, 308.
Faintise, 219.
Faisante, 219.
Faiselle, 270.
Fais frisque (je), 623.
Fais gré (je), 524.
Fais lamende (je), 618.
Fais la queue (je), 526.
Fais le petit (je), 622.
Fais les monstres (je), 643.
Fais ma table (je), 537.
Fait, fait, 677.
Falace, 218.
Falcement, 241.
Fallis (je), 705.
Fallot, 203, 210.
Falsement, 199.
Fame, 336.
Fameilleusement, 836.
Familleux, 3i4.
Fant, 219.
Fantasie (je), 545.
Faonne (je), 546.
Far, 198.
Farce (je), 545.
Farcement, 251.
Farcy (je), 545.
Fardage, 277.
Farde (je), 753.
Farfelue, 283.
Fascherie, 235.
Fasse, 277.
Fastige, 230.
Fatigation, 288.
Fatiste, 243.
Fatre (je), 461.
Fatrouille (je), 461.
Faucet, 219.
Faucille (je), 686.
Faulce, 270.

Faulce (je), 435;
Faulceté, 218.
Faulourde, 197.
Faulsit (qu'il), 413.
Fault (il), XLVIII.
Faulteux, 309.
Faulx, 270, 312.
Faulx a mon esme (je), 571.
Faulx bourg, 277.
Fauteurs, 309.
Fautuseté, 219.
Faueau, 211.
Fauourise (je), 546.
Fay, 97. --Conjugaison du verbe *faire*, 97.
Fayn, 232.
Faÿndre, 23.
Faysans, 420.
Faysant, 155.
Faysante, 155.
Fays court (je le), 429.
Fays de leaue (je), 524.
Fays de tel pain soupes (je), 710.
Fays du chiche (je), 657.
Fays du grant (je), 450.
Fays du mignot (je), 659.
Fays du muet (je), 588.
Fays propice (je), 540.
Fays une frisque (je), 548.
Feactise, 219.
Feaul, 327.
Feaulté, 218.
Feble, 312.
Fecundité, 255.
Feiz, 287.
Fel, 311.
Felonneux, 309.
Felonnie, 210.
Femetoyre, 219.
Feminal, 329.
Feminin; raisons du genre féminin, p. XXV, 66. --
Terminaison du féminin dans les adjectifs, 70. --Comment il se forme dans les adjectifs, 292-296.

Femmette, 68, 187.
Fendasse, 206, 263.
Fendis (je me), 465.
Fendure, 206, 263.
Fener, 230.
Feneur, 230.
Fenoil, 219.
Ferdin, 218, 219.
Fermable, 302.
Fermail, 205.
Fermouer, 205.
Ferron, 235.
Ferruge, 235.
Feste (un, une), 157.
Festijer, 6.
Festual, 312.
Festiuité, 245.
Festoyer, 6.
Festu, 211.
Festye (je), 482.
Fetart, 188, 241.
Feterdise, 220.
Fettart, 271.
Feuille, 220.
Feuillart, 280.
Feultre, 219.
Feusiere, 219.
Fiable, 327.
Fian, 214.
Fiance (je), 607.
Fianceailles, 278.
Fiant, 214.
Fie (je me); conjugaison de ce verbe, 114.
Fiens, 630.
Fiente (je), 641.
Fiere, 254.
Fiers, fierse, 315.
Fiers (je), 723.
Filace, 277.
Fil darcal, 288.
Fileresse, 274.
Filette, 220.
Fillace, 221.
Fillé, 49, 157.
Filliolle, 226.
Filosomie, 220.

Page 1104

Filure, 280.
Finablement, 808.
Fine (je), 533.
Fine (je me), 737.
Finé, 383.
Firmement, 57.
Flaccon, 220.
Flacquet, 255.
Flaiiau, 203.
Flambe, 220.
Flamesche, 220.
Flamette, 271.
Flamme (je), 457.
Flanche, 220.
Flanet, 221.
Flaon, 221.
Flaston, 220.
Flateur, 220.

Fourcelle, 205.
Forbannis (je), 650.
Force (je), 760.
Forcene (je), 678.
Forcenerie, 241.
Forcepte (je), 650.
Forcettes, 251, 266.
Forciblement, 842.
Forclorre, 109.
Forcluse, 429.
Forcrie (je), 650.
Forest, 164.
Forffis, 53.
Formangeus (je), 650.
Forment, 799.
Formiliere, 254.
Formosité, 218.
Formys, 164.

Foylle, 285.
Foyllet, 266.
Foyng, 242.
Foyennes, 221.
Foysonne (je), 439.
Fraelle, 316.
Fraictz, 209.
Fraille, 307.
Frain, 456.
Francbaisier, 236.
Franc encens, 222.
Frangible, 313.
Fraygne (je), 559.
Frect, 223.
Freme (je), 703.
Fremme (je), 541.
Fremys (je), 676.
Frenge, 223.

Flauelle, 283.
Flaytrys (je), 542.
Fleal, 173.
Flebesse, 219, 287.
Flet, 281.
Fleume, 221.
Fleure (je), 698.
Fleurement, 271.
Fleurissant, 63.
Fleuste dalemant, 278.
Flexis (je me), 738.
Floc, 221.
Flocquon, 240.
Flondre, 221.
Floque, 221.
Florissant, 57.
Floron, 221.
Flute (je), 658.
Fluue, 221.
Fluuiiau, 202.
Foeille, 238.
Foeillet, 238.
Foirre, 175, 277.
Folage, 215.
Folleur, 221.
Fome, 262.
Fonde, 271.
Fondrier, 213.
Fons, 221.

Forprens (je), 650.
Forsenerie, 289.
Forsque, 146.
Fors que, 847.
Fortier, 487.
Fortresse (je), 557.
Fortuné, 421.
Foruoye (je), 468.
Foruoye (je me), 557.
Fosselu, 320.
Fossetterie, 256.
Fossetteux, 321.
Fosseur, 214.
Fossoir, 273.
Fouble (je), 691.
Fouete (je), 706.
Fougiere, 219.
Foullonne (je), 755.
Foundriere, 260.
Fourbyscher, 222.
Fourche, 307.
Fourcheu, 15.
Fourme, 237.
Fourme (je me), 556.
Fournie (je), 442.
Fourniture, 263.
Fournoise, 271.
Fourraige, 259.
Foyeur, 214.

Freppier, 186.
Fresc, 296.
Frescheur, 207.
Fresleté, 222.
Fresseure, 257.
Fretillon, 232.
Freze, 277.
Friamment, 470.
Friandement, 470.
Friant, 309.
Frille (je), 483.
Frilleux, 307.
Frillonne (je), 704.
Frilonne (je), 575.
Frinct, 188.
Frinctaige, 188.
Fringotte (je), 558.
Fringue (je), 558.
Fringuereau, 200, 225.
Fringuerie, 225.
Frisque, 36, 313.
Fritier, 223.
Friuolle, 236.
Frocq, 223.
Froissis, 201.
Froissure, 223.
Froit, 209, 308.
Fromaige dengelon, 239.
Froncle, 198.

Page 1105

Frote (je), 342.
Froysse (je), 464.
Fructueuseté, 223.
Fruitage, 223.
Fruictifie (je), 449.
Frument, 208.
Frumentee, 223.
Frustratif, 310.
Fruyctier, 209, 223.
Frys (je), 558.
Fuaille, 444.
Fueille, 8.
Fueillée, 200, 240.
Fueillu, 301.
Fueillure, 320.
Fuier, 229.
Fuillart, 280.
Fumeuseté, 271.
Fumeux, 774.
Fumiere, 271.
Funde, 271.
Fundement, 223.
Funerale, 269.
Fureux, 313.
Furolle, 228.
Furon, 457.
Fusiere, 200.
Fust, 266.
Fustailles, 248.
Fuy, 149.
Fuis (je m'en); conjugaison de ce verbe, 119.
Fuytif, 10, 312.
Fyeble, 312.

G

G; sa prononciation, 29.
Gaigne, des deux genres, 174, 224.
Gaignier, 266.
Gallant, 681.
Gaillart, 8.

Galliarde, 321.
Gallicq, 303.
Gallon, 224.
Gambaulde, 224.
Gamboye, 283.
Gamme, 224.
Garante (je), 771.
Garconet, 187.
Garde, 274.
Gardian, 235.
Gardianne, 290.
Garence (je), 616.
Gargoille, 224.
Garguillon, 288.
Gariolle (je), 481.
Garis (je me), 771.
Garnache, 223.
Garnement, 224.
Garnier, 230.
Garnissement, 224.
Garroier, 351.
Garrot, 259.
Gars, 155.
Garsche (je), 484.
Garson, 237.
Gart, 393.
Gason, 227.
Gasouille (je), 456.
Gast, 54, 287.
Gasteau, 235.
Gattouille (je), 758.
Gauche, 271, 290.
Gaucheté, 238.
Gaudine, 290.
Gaudisseur, 268, 663.
Gauge, 224.
Gaugeur, 224.
Gaule, 313.
Gaulle, 240.
Gaultiere, 260.
Gaune, 108.
Gaunir, 108.

Gect, 281.
Gehenne (je), 463.
Gehynne (je), 463.
Geleux, 313.
Gemme, 258.
Genetoire, 242.
Geneure, 224.
Genial, 319.
Geniteur, 218.
Génitif. On supprime quelquefois *de* en français, XL, 141.
Genitrice, 246.
Genoul, 180.
Genres; trois en français, *masculin, féminin et commun*, XXIV, 159. --Deux en français, *masculin et féminin*, 66. --Incertain, 160. --Genres dans les adjectifs, XXVII, 70. --Dans les pronoms, XXIX. --Dans les substantifs, 153, 163-180.
Gent; des deux genres, 162.
Gentian, 224.
Gentillesse, 224.
Genuflection, 236.
Germain, 201.
Germandre, 224.
Geron, 271.
Gersure, 205.
Gesante, 290.
Gesine, 610.
Get, 234.
Getz, 224.
Gentyl femme, 178, 190.
Geu, 394.
Geulle, 280, 455.
Giande, 290.
Gibbesiere, 257.
Gibbesierier, 257.
Gibissiere, 196.
Gietz, 183.

Gailliarde, 329.
Gajer, 11.
Galée, 63, 204.
Galier, 233.
Galiffre, 241.

Gauerdine, 223, 243.
Gauion, 232.
Gayne (je), 559.
Gays, gayse, 313.
Ge pour *je*, 43.

Gingle (je), 566.
Giroufflée, 225
Gis (je), 610.
Giste, 177.

Page 1106

Glanceur, 225.
Glanders, 287.
Glandres, 183.
Glenne (je), 568.
Glette, 223, 224.
Gleu, 152.
Gleue, 159.
Gliceau, 200.
Glince (je me), 721.
Glorieuseté, 225.
Glorifiance, 225.
Giorifijer, 6.
Glose (je), 568.
Gloteron, 202.
Gloutonie, 225.
Gloutton, 225.
Gna, gne, gno; leur
prononciation, 8.
Gobe, 319.
Goblin, 231.
Godin, 309.
Godinet, 312.
Gojon, 226.
Gomys (je), 478, 652.
Gont, 230.
Gorgias, 247, 294, 307.
Gorgiasement, 844.
Gormant, 227.
Gorre, 223.
Gorrier, 314, 329.
Gort, 244, 286.
Goublin, 248.
Goudale, 193.
Gouernail, 276.
Goujons, 220.
Gouoystre, gouistre, 287.
Gourdy, 429.
Gourment, 225.
Gournault, 228.
Gourt, 277, 449.
Goust, 261.
Gouster, 279.
Goute, 210.
Gouttier, 228.
Gouvernance, 226.
Gouvernat, 226.
Gradale, 237.

Graffe (je), 574.
Grageur, 227.
Grajouer, 260.
Gramarien, 227.
Gramment, 60.
Granadier, 256.
Granche, 197, 203.
Grandet, 73, 303.
Grandgore, 256.
Grans, XLVIII.
Grant, 61.
Grant piece, 853.
Grant piece a, 802.
Grassie (je), 612.
Grat, gratte, 316.
Grateux, 316.
Gratigner, 338.
Gregois, 289.
Gregoyr, 253.
Greigneur, 72.
Greille (il), 577.
Grenetier, 211.
Grenaille, 223.
Gresille (je), 745.
Gresillon, 210.
Gresle, 172.
Grosse, 215.
Gressieur, 239.
Greuable, 314.
Greuance, 227.
Greuain, 314.
Greuayn, 324.
Greue, 267, 349.
Greues, 229.
Greuelure, 241.
Greuer, 386.
Greueux, 314.
Griache, 246.
Griasche, 329.
Griefz, 165.
Griesue, 227.
Grieux, 280.
Grimmeux, 314.
Grimneuseté, 228.
Grinche (je), 500.
Gringotte (je), 482, 771.
Grinse (je), 569.

Gripe, 205.
Grippe (je), 485.
Grisellé, 314.
Griseté, 227.
Gronce (je), 27, 693.
Grondelle (je), 573.
Grondellement, 403.
Grondis (je), 694.
Grongne (je), 574.
Grosset, 303.
Grossier, 244.
Grossye (je), 535.
Groule (je), 693.
Groye (je me), 461, 765.
Groygne (je), 558.
Groyng, 228.
Gruge (je), 575.
Grusle (je), 652.
Guaitter, 10.
Guarennier, 286.
Guaris (je me), 771.
Guarrant, 10.
Guayct, 287.
Guayres, 144.
Güe, 177.
Gué (la), 770.
Guecteurs, 275.
Guedde, 168.
Guenchys (je me), 704.
Guencis (je me), 705.
Guerdon, 165.
Guerdonne (je), 513.
Guerissement, 230.
Guermente (je me), 453.
Guerpis (je), 477.
Guespe, 10, 287.
Guigueron, 226.
Guille, 289.
Guimple, 172.
Guinche, 278.
Guingne (je me), 706.
Guiserne, 225.
Gulosité, 225.
Guyndas, 289.
Guynde (je), 782.
Guyngne (je me), 613.

Page 1107

H

H, aspiration, consonne, signe
orthographique, XXIII, 17. --
Tableau de tous les mots
français commençant par une *h*
aspirée, 18.
Haa, 149, 888.
Habandonnée, 380.
Habilite (je), 532.
Habilite (je me), 521.
Habilité, 228.
Habilite du lyn (je), 582.
Habitation, 299.
Habitaclé, 216.

Harceller, 18.
Hardillon, 18.
Harenc, 18, 230.
Harengiere, 18, 290.
Harengue, 18, 249.
Harias, 18.
Harie (je), 18, 545, 579.
Haro, 888.
Harol, 501.
Harper, 30.
Harpeur, 229,
Harpoy, 18, 256.
Hasart, 18.
Hascereill, 229.
Hasche, 229.
Hasle, 272.

Hecq, 229.
Hee, 149, 888.
Heer, 5.
Helle, 289.
Hemee, 18.
Hemy, 888.
Henny, 149.
Herault, 18.
Herbeherie, 255.
Herberge, 169, 229.
Herbergier, 18.
Herce, 18, 229.
Herce (je), 18, 579, 593.
Hercelle (je), 579.
Hercié, 18.
Hercier, 18.

Habite a femme (je), 491.
Habitue (je), 694.
Habundance, 228.
Habyl, 305.
Hachet, 18, 229.
Hacque (je), 577.
Hacquebutte, 266.
Hacquenée, 18.
Hadea, 888.
Ha ha, 149.
Haile (je), 577.
Haillion, 266.
Haitie, 318.
Halberde, 229.
Halcret, 251.
Halebarde, 18.
Haletter, 18.
Halion, 206.
Halle (je), 18, 577.
Halette (je), 611.
Hamacon, 28.
Hamasson, 18.
Hameux, 18.
Hanap, 18, 54, 211.
Hanche (je), 568.
Hanetton, 18.
Hannys (je), 18, 643.
Hanse, 281.
Hantel, 275.
Haras, 275.
Haraude (je), 583.
Harcelle (je), 588.

Haste, 218, 229.
Hastee, 274.
Haster, 18.
Hastereau, 18.
Hastif, 312.
Hastiuement, 836.
Hastiuité, 229.
Haterel, 18.
Hatifue, 10.
Hau, 149, 888.
Hauberjon, 18.
Hauboy, 286.
Haue (je), 723.
Hauet, 227, 228.
Haulberjon, 11, 229.
Haulbert, 229.
Hault, 18.
Haulte heure, 653.
Haultesse, 61.
Haulteur, 18.
Hay, 149, 888.
Haye (je), 582.
Hayneuseté, 249.
Haÿoÿe, 11.
Haytie (je), 568.
Haytyer, 18.
Hazardeur, 663.
Heaulme, 18.
Hebraicque, 311.
Hebrieu, 216.

Herdre, 18.
Heremite, 231.
Heretage, 8.
Hericon, 18.
Herigne, 274.
Heritique, 231.
Heronceau, 187.
Herpe, 18.
Hers (je), 486.
Hestre, 18.
Heurcque, 233.
Heure, 46.
Heure (je), 615, 624.
Heuree, 273.
Heuse, 18.
Heuser, 18.
Hideur, 232.
Hideuseté, 231.
Hierre, 228.
Hobbyn, 18.
Hober, 18.
Hobreau, 18, 231.
Hobyn, 231.
Hoche, 224.
Hochette, 18, 205.
Hochqueteur, 196.
Hocquet, 291.
Hocqueton, 18.
Hollette, 18, 271.
Home, 7.
Homonceau, 187.

Page 1108

Homonymes qui ne se distinguent que par la place de l'accent, 49. --Qui changent de genre selon leur sens, 157.
Honeste, 4.
Hongner, 18.
Honnesteté, 232.
Honneur, 271.
Honorér, 61.
Honnys (je), 609.
Honorable, 73.
Honourant, 73.
Honter, 18.
Hontie (je), 619.
Hontoye (je), 701.
Hony, 324.
Horiloge, 206.
Horilogier, 206.
Hombleté, 232.
Hors dordre, 467.
Hosche (je), 700, 745.
Hostagier, 232.
Hoste, 155, 279.
Hoatelaige, 229.
Hostellerie, 250.
Hostesse, 155.
Houe (je), 10, 516.
Houet, 280.
Houische, 888.
Houller, 18.
Hours, 18.
Hourt, 18.
Hous, 18, 232.
Houseau, 18.
Housette, 18.
Houspailler, 18.
Houspaillier, 232.
Houspillie (je), 745.
Housse (je), 700, 761.

Huchier, 18.
Hucque, 18.
Huée, 228.
Hueur, 231.
Huiboust, 18.
Huier, 18.
Huille, 249.
Huische (je), 473.
Humaige, 278.
Humain, 427.
Humblesse, 244.
Humee, 278.
Huppe (je), 18, 566, 706.
Hurte(je), 18, 599.
Hurtebiller, 18.
Hurtelle (je), 760.
Husche, 179.
Hutine (je), 566.
Hutyn, 250.
Hutyner, 18.
Huy, 143.
Huyct, 367.
Huys, 196.
Huysche (je), 486.
Hydeusement, 836.
Hyerre, 18.
Hyf, 234.
Hyre, 18.
Hysse (je), 595.

I

I; sa prononciation, 6, 55.
I et Y, figurative du thème de la deuxième conjugaison du verbe actif, XXXI. --Prononciation de l'*i*, même quand il n'est pas écrit dans le mot, 7. --Distinction de *i* voyelle et de *i* consonne, 10, 31. --Différence de prononciation

Ill et *ign*; leur prononciation devant *a*, *e*, *o*, XVII.
Illa, *ille*, *illo*; leur prononciation, 8.
Illec endroyt, 823.
Illecques, 823.
Il mest force de, 880.
Il ne seu fault rien, 651.
Il y a de loignon, 595.
Imparfect, 328.
Impartys (je), 522.
Impersonnel. Verbe impersonnel, XXX, 83, 129. -- Conjugaison du verbe *il aduient*, 131.
Impetre (je), 538.
Impiteable, 325.
Impreparation, 234.
Imprimeurs, 258.
Improperie (je), 603.
Impugny, 828.
Impurité, 285.
Inamoure, 307.
Inamouré, 307.
Incerteinté, 285.
Incitatif, 321.
Incitation, 276.
Incite (je), 537.
Inclinement, 234.
Incogneu, 328.
Increpe (je), 456, 680.
Indentures, 234.
Indeur, 286.
Indifferant, 316.
Indigne (je), 449.
Indole, 62, 239.
Infelicité, 234.
Infatue (je me), 553.
Inferme (je), 770.

Housser, 18.
Houssettes, 251.
Housseure, 18.
Houysche, 149.
Hoyer, 519.
Huan, 18.
Hucher, 18.

entre *i* et *y*, 16.
Icy endroyt, 819.
Icy entour, 819.
Ignoramment, 798.
Illec, 823.
Il fait a noter, 412.

Infertil, 305.
Infertile, 305.
Infertyl, 300.
Infeste (je), 765.
Infinitif, 328.
Inflation, 200.
Influe (je me), 784.
Infortune (un), 173.

Page 1109

Infringe (je), 683.
Ingeniosité, 261.
Inhaÿr, 12.
Inh (je), 591.
Inprennable, 316.
Inquiète (je), 519.
Insaciable, 63.
Insence (je), 591.
Instaure (je), 109, 687.
Instigue (je), 701.
Intellectif, 306.
Intellecture, 285.
Intencionel, 316.
Interdict, 211.
Interdissement, 234.
Interjections, 149.
Interpos, 252, 876.
Interrupte (je), 592.
Intime (je), 640.
Intitulation, 234.
Intitule (je), 538.
Intrinsique, 316.
Introduis (je), 467.
Introite, 217.
Inundation, 250.
Inuader, 139.
Inuahys (je), 592.
Inuasible, 362.
Inuestigue (je), 37, 762.
Inueterre (je), 694.
Inuisibleté, 234.
Inuocque (je), 473.
Ire (je), 431.
Ireément, 838.
Ireux, 15, 316.
Irrision, 237.
Irrite (je), 464.
Irrue (je me), 705.
Isnel, 294.
Issis (je), 503.
Itere (je), 594.

J

Ja, 146.
Jacincte, 233.
Jacq, Jacque, 283.
Jaet, 224.

Jaihant, 225.
Jambet, 283.
Jamboye (je), 572, 738.
Jamboye (je me), 589.
Jangle (je), 589.
Janglerie, 233.
Jangleur, 233.
Japeaux, 790.
Ja pieca, 809.
Jaqueduc, 233.
Jargonne (je), 481.
Jarretier, 224.
Ja soyt ce, 148.
Ja soyt ce que, 872.
Jaspre, 233.
Jaunastre, 306.
Jaunice, 233.
Jaunis (je me), 775.
Jaeleyne, 238.
Jaye, 248.
Je compere, 400.
Ject, 203.
Jecton, 209.
Je mesmes, 376.
Je me veulx prier, 642.
Jenneure, 235.
Jeuedy absolu, 266.
Joueur, 54.
Jeussouer, 264.
Jocque (je), 733, 736.
Joe de poisson, 225.
Joieuseté, 219.
Jointys (je), 592.
Joliveté, 235.
Jonche (je), 450, 706.
Joncherie, 200.
Jornée, 235.
Jorroise, 232.
Joue de pas a pas (je), 592.
Jouée, 199.
Joueur de souplesse, 283.
Jouge (je), 595.
Jougle (je), 595.
Joumarin, 220.
Jour de ma vie, 510.
Journée, 235.

Journal, 309.
Journoye (je), 593.
Jousier, 244.
Jouste, 318.
Jouste, jousteur, 235.
Jouxte, 38, 137, 794.
Jovien, 316.
Joynct, joyncture, 235.
Joyr, 12.
Judication, 235.
Jueudy, 178.
Juing, 235.
Junonien, 306.
Jus, 825.
Jus et sus, 843.
Jusques a tant, jusques a ce, 144.
Jusques cy, 6.
Juvenil, 330.

K

K, souvent employé dans le vieux *romant*, 32. --Rarement employé dans la langue françoise, XXIII. --Ne termine jamais un nom substantif singulier, XXVI; ni un adjectif masculin singulier, XXVI. --Sa prononciation, 31.
Kalende, 31.
Kalendrier, 31.

L

L; sa prononciation, 32.
La, le, devant un mot qui commence par une voyelle, 45.
Laboriosité, 237.
Lacquet, 222.
Lacteux, 318.
Laderye, 274.
La Dieu mercy, 754.
Ladresse, 266.
La endroyt, 823.
La greignieure part, 860.
Laidengeux, 322.
Laideté, 222.

Page 1110

Laideure, 222.
Lais, 238.
Laite, 274.
La malle bosse, 867.
Lame, 276.
Lance (je), 739.
Lancequenet, 237.
Langeur, 269.
Langore (je), 603.
Langoure (je), 495.
Languereuse, 169.
Lanifice, 290.

Leonceau, 68.
Leonesse, 239.
Leopard, 155.
Le pas menu, 830.
Les aulcuns, 360.
Les jours noz peres, 612.
Les plusieurs, 366.
Lesse (je), 605.
Let, 330.
Letanye, 238.
Letice, 239.
Letiere, 232.

Loette, 220.
Logitien, 240.
Loingtain, 57.
Loisibleté, 223.
Loissebleté, 238.
Longe temps, 413.
Longeur, 238, 270.
Longtemps a, 810.
Longuet, 249.
Loppine (je), 640.
Loricarde (je), 613.
Loricart, 241.

Laperiau, 291.
 Lappreau, 260.
 La rayson car, 865.
 Larde (je), 706.
 Largesse, 237.
 Laronceau, 187.
 Larrecyn, 165.
 Larronnesse, 155.
 Larroyt, 401.
 Las, 149.
 Lasche, 312.
 Lasdre, 237.
 Lasdriere, 237.
 Lasniere, 237, 280.
 Lasse, 149.
 Lasse (je), 599, 612.
 Lasseresse, 236.
 Latiesme, 172.
 Laton, 237.
 Latre (je), 443.
 Latz, 199, 237.
 Laureole, 213.
 Lauement, 502.
 Layn, 324.
 Layrra, 401.
 Layt, 70.
 Leans, 823.
 Lecherie, 238.
 Leciteté, 238.
 Le coeur luy abhomine, 692.
 Lectus, 238.
 Ledenge (je), 680.
 Legier, 317.
 Lembic, 163, 238.
 Len ou *on*, XXIX, 77.

Lettres; il y en a vingt-trois en français, XXIII.
 Leueton, 291.
 Leuriere, 155.
 Leyrot, 214.
 Lez, 818.
 Liart, 288.
 Liberaleté, 239.
 Libidinosité, 284.
 Lice, 271.
 Licitité, 237.
 Lict, 197.
 Lie (je me), 683.
 Liesue (je me), 436.
 Lieue marque (je), 709.
 Lieuseté, 215.
 Lieux, 311.
 Ligne (je), 611.
 Limignon, 243, 272.
 Limitte (je), 434.
 Lineature, 259.
 Linette, 238.
 Lingiere, 266.
 Lingnée, 236.
 Liniere, 221.
 Lisarde, lizarde, 239.
 Lisse, 271.
 Lit de champ, 283.
 Liticonteste (je), 683.
 Liuerée, 240.
 Lobe (je), 446, 639.
 Lobes, 64.
 Loche (je), 700.
 Locquet, 237.
 Locution, 274.

Lormier, 242.
 Lors quant, 813.
 Los, 402.
 Louche (une), 157.
 Louchet, 249.
 Loudier, 260.
 Loudiere, 215.
 Louenge, 257.
 Louier, 223.
 Loule (je), 452.
 Loupin, 267.
 Loupue, 155.
 Lourdault, 216.
 Lourdesse, 277.
 Lourt, 306.
 Louue, 266.
 Loygnet, 303.
 Loyng, 109.
 Loyngtain, 312.
 Luberdine, 250.
 Lucque, 241, 659.
 Luicter, 23.
 Luisance, 201.
 Luissance, 267.
 Luminure, 174.
 Lunettier, 274.
 Lus, 241.
 Luycte (je), 785.
 Luyte, 290.
 Lyens, 143.
 Lyette, 281.
 Lymon, 271.
 Lyonnesse, 155.

Page 1111

M

M; sa prononciation, XIX, 22, 24, 32.
 Mace, 206, 241.
 Machecoulle (je), 616.
 Machouere, 204.
 Macier, 269.
 Macquereau, 155, 242.
 Macquerelle, 155, 289.
 Macule, 274.
 Magicque, 241.
 Magnificq, 73.
 Magnifie (je), 6, 616.
 Magnifijer, 6.
 Maige, 287.
 Maigreté, maigresse, 238.
 Maille (je), 632.
 Maillotte (je), 632, 744.
 Maine guerre (je), 772.
 Mainent, 185.
 Maintinement, 241.
 Maintiengne, 8.
 Mais (je ne puis mais), XLII.
 Maisgre, 263.
 Maisne, 291.
 Maisrien, 227.
 Maistre, XLVIII.
 Maistrise (je), 648.
 Mal (adjectif), mal engin, 76.
 Mal a droyt, 835.
 Maladuenant, 328.
 Maladuenture, 245.
 Maladuisé, 328.
 Malan, 287.
 Malandre, 242.

Maligne (je), 632.
 Maliuolence, 217.
 Malle, 311.
 Malle heure, 62.
 Mallement, 145, 798.
 Malliet, 238.
 Malotreu, 879.
 Mal saint Jehan, 218.
 Malsiet (il), 637.
 Malsoigneux, 319.
 Maltalent, 217.
 Maluré, 328.
 Maluais, 309.
 Maluatie, 270.
 Maluays, 71.
 Mamellette, 240.
 Manchet, 315.
 Mancipe, 174, 269.
 Mandeglaire, 176, 242.
 Mandiance, 195, 197.
 Mangeut (il me), 722.
 Mangoyre, 243.
 Manifeste (je), 632.
 Manoyr, 393.
 Manquet, 315.
 Mantien, 257.
 Marchage, 282.
 Marchalcée, 243.
 Marche (je), 473.
 Marche coulys, 257.
 Marchepié, 222.
 Marchié, 49.
 Marchis (je), 473.
 Marchys (je), 632.
 Marcque, 274.
 Mardaille, 207.

Marris, 164.
 Marrisson, 214,
 Marsage, 282.
 Martelas, 244.
 Martelle (je), 452.
 Martinet, 217.
 Martire (je), 633.
 Maruailable, 329.
 Maruailant, 290.
 Maruaille (je me), XXXV, 83.
 Maruailleux, 162.
 Mascq, 232.
 Masculin. Raisons du genre masculin, XXIV, 66.
 Masiere, 243.
 Masle, 241 242.
 Masrayne, 281.
 Masson, 243.
 Massonne (je), 507.
 Massonnerye, 243.
 Mast, 53.
 Mastic, 243.
 Mastin, 211.
 Mat, 320.
 Mathematicque, 20.
 Matineux, 322.
 Matire, 275.
 Matrimoyne, 497.
 Matteredas, 198.
 Mattes, 211.
 Mauette, 260.
 Mauffe, 231.
 Maufle, 290.
 Mauldict, 309.
 Mauldis, 53.
 Mauldission, 165.

Malapert, 315.
Mal a poynt, 835.
Maldire, 109.
Maldisant, 217.
Malendre, 176.
Malengin, 210.
Maletot, 270.
Malette, 252, 268.
Maleur, 166, 217.
Maleurette, 285.
Malfortune, 316.

Margeline, 243.
Marguy, 219.
Marichal, 283.
Maritain, 306.
Marle, 172, 243.
Marmixteux, 242.
Marmoset, 243.
Maronniere, 290.
Marpault, 252.
Marrastre, 246.
Marre, 276.

Mauldisson, 211.
Maulgraneux, 317.
Maulgre, 274.
Maulgré mes dens, 842.
Maulplaisant, 310.
Mauluaiseté, 239.
Mauluis, 281.
Mausade, 328.
Mausoigneux, 322.
Mauuaysement, 841.
Mauue, 268.

Page 1112

May (un), 193.
Mayn a mayn, 836.
Mayne (je), 466.
Mayne chere enragiée (je), 750.
Mayniau, 273.
Maynie, 233.
Mayntenant mayntenant, 882.
Maynt homme, 860.
Mays, 854.
Mays que, 885.
Mecredy, 280.
Medicinable, 318.
Medicine (je), 583.
Medicyne, 244.
Meffaict, 245.
Meffais (je), 524.
Mehaigne (je), 617.
Mehaygneté, 237.
Meisgre, 108.
Melancholieux, 318.
Melencolie, 244.
Melle, 280.
Mellé, 244.
Memore, 298.
Menasse (je), 755.
Menasses, 280.
Menchonges, 64.
Menchongier, 64.
Mencionne (je), 625.
Mendicant, 244.
Mene mal (je), 637.
Meneu, 296.
Mengeue (je), 540.
Mengeus, mengeusse, 29.
Mengeut (il me), 333.
Menje (je), 102.
Menu menu, 841.
Menuement, 833, 841.
Menuserie, 234.
Menuyse (je), 476.
Menye, 248.
Mercerot, 253.
Merche (je), 633.
Mercie (je), 754.
Mercredy de la cendre, 195.
Merde fin, 253.

Meregrant, 179.
Meretrice, 229.
Meritable, 318.
Meritrice, 401.
Merlus, 244.
Merque (je), 633.
Mersouyn, 256.
Merueillable, 318.
Merys (je), 513.
Mes, 244.
Mesaduiant (il), 637.
Mesagrée (je), 636.
Mesaise (je), 637.
Mescant, 296.
Meschance, 245.
Mesche, 272.
Mescheoys (je), 637.
Meschief, 245.
Meschiet (il), 580.
Meschine, 215.
Mescompte (je), 500, 637.
Mescougnos (je), 638.
Mesconseille (je), 637.
Mescontente (je), 518.
Mescorde (je), 519.
Mescoute (je me), 638.
Mescreance, 245.
Mescroys (je), 637.
Mesdire, 109.
Mesdis (je), 638.
Meseau, 244.
Mesentens (je), 638.
Mesfaire, 109.
Mesgarde (je), 638.
Mesgouerne (je), 637.
Meshuy, 16, 143.
Mesmes, il mesmes, 79.
Mesnagerie, 233.
Mesnagier, 233.
Mesnaige, 277.
Mesoffre (je), 645.
Mespars (je), 512.
Mesparys (je), 523.
Mespens (je), 638.
Mesple, 244.
Mesplier, 244.
Mesprens (je me), 636.

Mesprison, 165, 245.
Meterie, 212, 219.
Mets a chiefe (je), 469.
Mets en effect (je), 541.
Mets en sauf (je), 605.
Mets en termes (je), 490.
Mets hors (je), 541.
Mets jus (je), 601.
Mets longuement (je), 427.
Mettier, 290.
Metz, 39.
Metz a raval (je), 470.
Metz suz (je luy), 450.
Meu, 318.
Meue, 245.
Meuf, 246.
Meulle, 245.
Meulonne (je), 621.
Meurdre, 271.
Meure, 11.
Meureté, 244.
Meurier, 11.
Meuris (je), 691.
Meurray (je), 401.
Meurs (moeurs), 61. --Des deux genres, 161.
Meurtressouere, 255.
Meue (je), 635.
Meylieur, 364.
Meynte, 224.
Mez, 64.
Michelle, 156.
Mieulx, 145.
Mieulz, 147.
Mignonnerie, 257.
Mignot, otte, 286.
Mignotise, 245.
Mignotte (je), 470.
Mignotterie, 212.
Miliaire, 245.
Milion, 245.
Miniere, 226.
Ministration, 245.
Minques, 245.
Minue (je), 624.
Mirabolan, 245.
Mirouer, 225.

Page 1113

Misté, 37.
Mistion, 37.
Mistionne (je), 634.
Mitaigue, 225.
Mitigue (je), 639.
Mitiguer, 349.
Mixt, 242.
Mocquerie, 268.
Mocqueur, 268.
Modes. Il y en a six: l'*indicatif*,

Morier, 247.
Moriginé, 329.
Morseau, 246.
Mortasie (je), 640.
Mortgaige (je), 640.
Mortpou, 252.
Morueuseté, 272.
Motif, motifue, 318.
Motion, 245.
Moton, 283.

Murmuration, 228.
Musangere, 281.
Musardie, 221, 243.
Muse (je), 642.
Musnier, 245.
Musque, 177, 247.
Musquet, 289.
Musquin, 247.
Musse (je me), 616.
Mutilateur, 241.

l'impératif, l'optatif ou potentiel, le subjonctif, le conditionnel, l'infinitif, XXXI.
Moe, 246.
Moeau, 291.
Moette, 268.
Moille (je), 639.
Moillé, 329.
Moilleure, 288.
Moisture, 246.
Mol, 202.
Mol de loraylle, 239.
Moleste, 227.
Molet, 218.
Molinet, 260.
Mom, 149.
Mommeur, 247.
Mon: cest mon, ce fait mon, 146; --ascuauoir mon, 149.
Monaye, 206.
Monayeur, 206.
Monition, 286.
Monnier, 759.
Monosyllabes; n'ont pas d'accent en français, 47.
Monstier, 205.
Monstrance, 267.
Monstre (une), 157; --unes monstres, 183.
Monstrer, XLVIII.
Montaignette, 282.
Montance, 273.
Montjoy, 227.
Montjoye, 218.
Mordacité, 262.
More, 247.
Moreue, 265.

Page 1114

Ne feroye je point que saige? 659.
Neffle, 249.
Nefflier, 249.
Ne fust cela, 880.
Ne mieulx ne pis, 839.
Nenny, 146, 866.
Nenny non, 866.
Nessung, nessune, 82.
Ne tant ne quant, 510.
Neu, 206.
Neu, neue, 319.
Neu damours, 283.
Neudz, 25.
Neufiesme, 372.
Neueux, 317.
Nicement, 839.
Niceté, 248, 607.
Nicquet, 233.
Nieble, 245.
Niée, 201, 203.
Niepce, 247.
Niet, 270.
Nieux, 305.
Nigromancien, 248.
Nigromantie, 248.
Nimphette, 240.
Niuiau, 257.
Noiret, 325.
Noisif, 268.
Nombres, on pourrait en compter trois en français, XXVI. --Deux nombres, le singulier et le pluriel, 67. --

Mouceau, 283.
Mouche (je), 505.
Mouchet, 247.
Mouchette, 240.
Mouchouer, 229.
Mouelle, 243, 265.
Moufle, 230.
Moulcture, 23.
Moulle, 246.
Mouls (je), 575.
Moult, 145, 300.
Moultitude, 246.
Mountarde, 247.
Mourine, 246, 264.
Mourre, 247.
Mouue (je me), 635.
Moyen. Verbes moyens, XXX, XXXIII, 83, 111; --leur signification, leur circonlocution dans les temps prétérīts, leur déclinaison personnelle, XXXIV.
Moyeul, 247, 291.
Moylle, 8.
Moy mesmes, 345.
Moyne, 282.
Moyson, 198, 270.
Muance, 204, 284.
Muce, 272.
Muce (je), 584.
Muche, 221.
Mue couleur (je), 457.
Mues, 185.
Muetté, 214.
Multicolore, 242.
Mumme (je), 642.
Murmuratif, 319.

O

O; sa prononciation, 6, 55. --
Devant *m* ou *n*, sa prononciation, XVII. --Ne termine jamais un nom substantif singulier, XXVI. --Ni un adjectif singulier masculin, XXVII.
Obedient, 319.
Obfusque (je), 516.
Obhumbration, 239.
Oblittere (je), 458.

Mutlle (je), 617.
Mutine (je), 495.
Muy, 231, 460.
Mye, pour *pas* ou *point*, vieux mot romant, XLI. --N'est plus d'un bon français, 110.

N

N; sa prononciation, XIX, 22, 24, 33.
Nacion, 247.
Nacle, 243.
Naguayres, 807.
Naiscance, 198.
Na pas gramment, 856.
Naquair, 247.
Nasillation, 275.
Nasselle, 200.
Nassellette, 240.
Natier, 243.
Nau, 267.
Naufrage (je), 426.
Naufrage, 63.
Naure (je), 784.
Nauiere, 267.
Nauigaige, 264, 380.
Navire, des deux genres, 161.
Nays (je); conjugaison du verbe *naître*, 127.
Nayntre, 216.
Ne après *que*; *plus que je ne dis*, XLIII, 147. --Ne, devant une négation, *je ne le verray jamais*, XLIII.
Neant plus, 850.
Ne bien ne mal, 839.
Neement, 5.

Oche, 248.
Oche (je), 644.
Odoratif, 306.
OE, 10.
OEufes, 663.
OEuffre, 249.
Oeuue, 264.
Oeuure (je), 646, 784.
Offence, 249.
Offencion, 63, 249.
Offends (je), 645.
Offention, 214.
Offers (je), 645.
Offretoire, 174.
Oi; sa prononciation, XVIII.
Ole (je), 722.
Oleur, 265.
Oliphant, 249.
Oncques jamais, 808.
Onques (*ever*), 143.
Ons; terminaison ordinaire de la première personne pluriel dans les verbes, XXXIII.
Opacité, 212.
Opportun, 305.
Oppose (je), 677.
Oppresse, 249.
Oppresse (je), 481, 647.
Opprime (je), 647.
Opprobieuse, 348.
Optatif (mode), 84, 85.
Optatif, 329.
Oraille, 460.
Ordoye (je), 549.

Dans les adjectifs, XXXIII. --
Dans les pronoms, XXIX.
Noms. Substantifs, adjectifs,
66. Six accidents du nom, 66. --
Nom substantif, XXIV. --Noms
substantifs qui s'écrivent de
même, mais sont de genre
différent, 157. --Formés
d'adjectifs, 189. --De verbes,
189.
Nonce (je), 708.
Nonchalance, 247.
Non en da, 866.
Non pourtant, 879.
Notte, 248.

Obliuieux, 313.
Obmets (je), 608.
Obnubule (je), 506.
Obscurcer, 37.
Obscure (je), 436.
Obscuris (je), 513.
Obscurté, 63.
Obstant, 37.
Obtempere (je), 645.
Obumbration, 266.
Obumbre (je), 699.
Obuehys (je), 668.
Occulte (je), 584.
Occultation, 249.
Occupie (je), 645.

Ordre, septième accident des
adjectifs, 73. --Sixième
accident des pronoms, 78.
Oreille (je), 579, 605.
Oreilliere, 216.
Orendroyt, 803.
Orengier, 249.
Ores, 62.
Orfeuerie, 226.
Orgre, 250.
Orgres, 538.
Orgueilleuseté, 259.
Oriere, 290.

Page 1115

Ortiegrache, 179.
Ort, 594.
Ort, orde, 313.
Ortraict, 215.
Oruier, 272.
Os (je), 335, 583.
Ossu, 306.
Ostade, 269.
Ostadine, 265.
Oste (je), 449.
Ostenter, 37.
Ostruce, 37.
Ostruche, 250.
Ostyl, 281.
Ot (eut), 64.
Ou, diphthongue; sa
prononciation, 15.
Ou (dans le), 57, 63, 185, etc.
Oubliance, 222.
Ou chief, 820.
Oudeur, 249.
One, 800.
Ou endroyt, 886.
Ouert, 320.
Oultraige, 63.
Oultre, XLVIII.
Oultrebort, 848.
Oultrecheuauche (je), 650.
Oultrecrier, 650.
Oultrecuidance, 63.
Oultrecuider, 139.
Oultrecuyde, 319.
Oultrepasse (je), 541.
Oultre plus, 877.
Oultreysme (je), 650.
Oultre sans, 874.
Oultretyre (je), 650.
Ou mesmes temps, 809.
Ou monde, 820.
Ourelet, 287.
Oureleure, 230, 287.
Ourllet, 230.
Ourse, 155.
Ourtie, 199.
Ourtie (je), 644.
Oustil, 250.
Ou surplus, 878.

Ouuerage, 290.
Ouueriere, 290.
Ouuers(je), 647.
Ouuragerie, 288.
Ouy en da, 866.
Ouyez, 545.
Ouÿoÿe, 11.
Oy, diphthongue; sa
prononciation, 13.
Oya, 149, 888.
Oyel, 45, 201.
Oyllet, 224, 225.
Oyncture, 249.
Oyngs (je), 432.
Oysiau, 230.
Oystre, 249.
Oysÿau, 11.

P

P; sa prononciation, 33. --Ne
termine jamais un nom adjectif
singulier masculin, XXVII,
XXVIII.
Paces, 183, 251.
Pacience, 250.
Pacient, 250.
Pacque (je), 650.
Pacquet, 250.
Pagee, 270.
Paillardif, 305.
Paillardyr, 570.
Paillardys (je), 659.
Pailliardiau, 232.
Pailliette, 273.
Paillietterie, 273.
Paillieur, 230.
Paire a paire, 833.
Parrayn, 153.
Pais, 208.
Paisant, 233.
Palet, 263.
Palfrenier, 291.
Palfronier, 232.
Palis, 251.
Palisseur, 251.
Palle, 171, 202.
Palleteau, 251.

Palette, 236.
Palomme, 267.
Palu, 163.
Palustre, 202.
Pan, 155.
Pance, 251.
Pance (je), 652.
Panche, 468.
Panesse, 253.
Panne, 251.
Pannesse, 155.
Pannettiere, 236.
Panniau, 266.
Pantier, 186.
Paonnet, 252.
Paour, 145.
Paoureux, 311.
Papegault, 256.
Papelarde (je), 655.
Papephis, 241.
Paracheuer, 423.
Paradventure, 146, 840.
Paragon, 242.
Parascheuer, 352.
Parastre, 218.
Parauant, 802.
Parayde (je), 583.
Par ce poynt, 834.
Parcité, 220.
Parconniner, 252.
Parcroys (je), 504.
Par cy amont, 825.
Par cy aual, 825.
Par cy deuant, 808.
Pardicques, 630.
Pardonatif, 313.
Pardonnance, 251.
Pardonnier, 251.
Pardoynt, 646.
Pardris, 164.
Pardu, 360.
Pardurablement, 854.
Pare (je), 647, 652.
Parecien, 252.
Parement, 206.
Parempoire, 244.
Par ens, 824.

Page 1116

Par escot, 832.
Par especial, 818.
Par eur, 839.
Parfait. Verbe parfait, XXX.
Parfect, 320.

Partue (je), 598.
Parturbe (je), 653.
Par ung tel si, 843.
Paruerse (je), 539.
Paruersement, 840.

Payngdrent (ils), 397.
Payre (je), 484.
Payrie (je), 633.
Peaultrier, 253.
Peautraylle, 188.

Parfinis (je), 492.
 Parfont, 232, 309.
 Parforce (je), 534, 652.
 Parforme (je), 652.
 Parfournis (je), 492.
 Parfournys (je), 558, 652.
 Pariforme, 317.
 Paris. Prononciation de l'r à Paris, 34. --Supériorité du dialecte de Paris sur tous les autres, 34-35.
 Parjurement, 380.
 Par la chair bieu, 866.
 Par la mort bieu, 866.
 Par le corps bieu, 866.
 Par le menu, 840.
 Parmanie (je), 538.
 Par meslée, 839.
 Par my, 817.
 Parochiale, 252.
 Parolle (je), 727.
 Paroquet, 256.
 Par poulcées, 833.
 Parquet, 257.
 Par rayson, 839.
 Pars (je me), 512.
 Parsil, 252.
 Parsin, 252.
 Parsommer, 200.
 Parsonnage, 255.
 Parsonnier, 252.
 Participes. Il y en a de deux sortes, le *participe présent* actif, et le *participe prétérit* passif; tous deux avec genres et nombres, XXXVII, 134.
 Partie, *elle s'en fut partie*, 41.
 Parties du discours. Trois fois trois, XXIV. --Variables et invariables, 65.
 Partitifs. Noms partitifs, XXIX, 359.

Par vostre congié, 834.
 Pascient, 320.
 Pasmoison, 273.
 Pasques, 156.
 Passeron, 273.
 Passif. Verbe passif, XXX, XXXIII, 124. --Conjugaison d'un verbe passif, 126.
 Paste, 49.
 Pasté, 49.
 Pasteux, 307.
 Pastisaige, 252.
 Pastisier, 252.
 Pasture (je), 654.
 Pasturiau, 252.
 Pasturon, 252.
 Pas ung nycquet, 851.
 Pat, 631.
 Patelle (je), 484, 681.
 Patenostre, 163.
 Paternostres, 251.
 Patessouer, 254.
 Paticier, 254.
 Patinier, 252.
 Patieue, 252.
 Patois, 261.
 Patoys, 257.
 Pattyn, 271.
 Patyse (je), 655.
 Paulme, 280.
 Paulpiere, 239.
 Paupier, 219.
 Pause (je), 655.
 Pautonnier, 226.
 Pauais, 252.
 Paeuillon, 252.
 Pauiment, 251.
 Pauorette, 187.
 Payngs (je), 651.
 Payncte, 169.
 Payndre, 23.
 Payne, 158, 227.

Pechié, 270.
 Pecunial, 320.
 Pedissequé, 204.
 Pel, 164.
 Pèlicon, 224.
 Pelle (je), 457.
 Pellé, 254.
 Pellerin, 254.
 Pellice, 251.
 Pellier, 271.
 Pellu, 302.
 Pellure, 252.
 Pelote, 280.
 Peltier, 288.
 Penance, 253.
 Pence (je), 112.
 Pencif, 318.
 Pencifueté, 253.
 Pencion, 253.
 Pencionnaire, 242.
 Pené, 401.
 Peneuse, 280.
 Penibleté, 253.
 Penitance, 591.
 Penitancier, 253.
 Pennet, 221.
 Pensement, 212.
 Pensifuesse, 280.
 Pentecoste, 156.
 Peramour, 251.
 Perboux (je), 652.
 Perceuerance, 253.
 Perclos (je), 448.
 Perdurable, 308.
 Peré, 49.
 Peregrant, 227.
 Perfect, 320.
 Perfyn, 164.
 Perge (je), 779.
 Perjure, 174.
 Permanableté, 278.
 Permy, 137.

Page 1117

Perpetulle (je), 758.
 Perplexe, 214.
 Perplexite (je), 467.
 Perreucque, 209.
 Pers, 306.
 Pers (je), 606.
 Persin, 253.
 Personnel. Verbe personnel, XXX, 83.
 Personnes. Les noms substantifs sont tous de la troisième personne, XXVII, 68. --Dans les pronoms, XXIX.
 Persoreille, 217.
 Persouer, 252.
 Perspective, 320.
 Perspicacité, 270.
 Perturbe (je), 458.
 Peruertys (je), 656.
 Pesche a verge (je), 431.
 Peschement, 220.
 Pescheur, 220.
 Pesible, 320.
 Pesibleté, 252.
 Pesiere, 252, 275.
 Pesle et mesle, 836.
 Pestail, 253.
 Pestille (je), 650.
 Petie (je me), 733.

Picquotin, 244.
 Picquotterie, 258.
 Picquotteure, 256.
 Pié, 49.
 Pieca, 28, 802.
 Piece (je), 655.
 Piedges (ungz), 482.
 Piegne (je), 488.
 Piegneresse, 481.
 Piengne, 207.
 Piengnier, 207.
 Pignolle, 254.
 Pigon, 254.
 Pille, 254.
 Pille des joncz (je), 657.
 Pilleur, 254.
 Pilleure, 254.
 Pilleuse, 254.
 Pilleuses, 471.
 Pilot, 254.
 Pinse (je), 657.
 Pinsure, 198.
 Pipe (je), 658.
 Pipeur, 197.
 Piteable, 318.
 Piteuseté, 254.
 Placque (je), 507.
 Placqueur, 212.
 Plaige, 169, 223.

Plastras, 263.
 Plastre, 255.
 Plastreur, plastrier, 255.
 Plate, 245.
 Platin, 203.
 Platine, 252.
 Platteur, 255.
 Platteure, 220.
 Playngs (je), 453.
 Playt, 255.
 Plede (je), 580.
 Pledge (je), 461, 660.
 Pleige, 169, 200.
 Plentureuseté, 255.
 Plessie (je), 448.
 Pleuuis (je), 623.
 Plies, 473.
 Plignon, 279.
 Plinge (je), 523.
 Plinget, 279.
 Plionne (je), 695, 785.
 Ploianteur, 255.
 Plombée, 226.
 Plomme, 253.
 Plomme (je), 431.
 Plommée, 256.
 Plommeur, 256.
 Plotte, 196.
 Plotton, 200.

Petille (je), 761.
Petille (je me), 764.
Petitoye, 224.
Petrie (je), 602.
Peult (il), XLVIII.
Peyne (je me), 401.
Ph. Comment *ph* se prononce en français, 19.
Phantasie, 20.
Phantasticq, 320.
Phantosme, 172.
Phisonomie, 62, 254.
Phrenaisie, 222.
Phrenesie, 222.
Picq, 244, 274.
Picque, 246.
Picque de lesieul (je), 657.
Picqueteure, 256.

Plaigne, 255.
Plain, 307.
Plainct, 207.
Plaine lune, 223.
Plaingt, 246.
Plainté, 255.
Plait, 247.
Planche (je), 460.
Planché, 49.
Planere, 223.
Planeur, 255.
Planier, 255.
Planiere, 223.
Planis (je), 659.
Planisse (je), 659.
Planteureux, 314.
Planteyne, 255.
Planye (je), 659.

Plourons (nous), 104.
Plouuier, 256.
Ploy, 63.
Pluest, 385.
Plumacier, 250.
Plumart, 202.
Plumette, 240.
Plumeu, 312.
Plumeuseté, 221.
Plummart, 256.
Plummee, 317.
Plummeux, 317.
Pluriel. Dans les noms substantifs, 67, 180. --Dans les noms adjectifs, 70, 296. --Noms substantifs qui n'ont que le pluriel, 182.
Plurier, pluriere, 321.

Page 1118

Plus chier que, 883.
Plutonique, 306.
Poetical, 321.
Poictral, 251.
Poictrel, 253.
Poille, XL, 206.
Poillon, 14, 271.
Poiltron, 263.
Poincte (je), 662.
Poincture, 57.
Poings (je), 666.
Poissonnette, 240.
Pois, 226.
Pollayn, 207.
Polu, 309, 401.
Pomendier, 256.
Pomeu, 321.
Pommeau, 202.
Pomme dorenge, 249.
Pomys, 257.
Pondere (je), 540.
Pondereux, 329.
Ponneu, 473.
Pons (je), 601.
Populosité, 255.
Porc espin, 256.
Porchier, 278.
Porchierie, 278.
Porcion, 256.
Poree, 290.
Porette, 256.
Porrant, 202.
Porret, 249.
Porte a terre (je), 449.
Porte ens (je), 476.
Porte malice (je), 449.
Portenseigne, 275.
Portescuelle, 214.
Porte soyng (je), 475.
Porteuolant, 257.
Portraicture, 215.
Pose, 146.
Possette, 257.
Posté, 257.
Posterne, 161, 218.
Postille, 37.
Postpose (je), 608.

Pottin, 273.
Pou, 312.
Pouer, 347.
Pouffe (je), 669.
Pouille (je), 615.
Poul, 180.
Poulaine, 267.
Poulce (un, une), 158.
Poulcier, 220, 239.
Poulciere, 259.
Pouldre, 216.
Poullaille, 257.
Poullain, 209.
Poullane, 259.
Poullaylle, 470.
Pouluereux, 311.
Pour autant que, 865.
Pourbondis (je), 561, 596.
Pourbondys (je), 664.
Pour ce que, 865.
Pourchas, 259.
Pourchasse (je), 421, 670.
Pourcif, 321.
Pour commencement, 885.
Poure, 11.
Poureté, 50.
Pourgation, 259.
Pourgez, 166.
Pour huy mays, 855.
Pourjecte (je), 476.
Pour lamour que, 865.
Pourmayne (je), 604.
Pour nulle riens, 865.
Pourparle (je), 508, 680.
Pourpens, 259.
Pourpense (je), 453.
Pourpos, 259.
Pourprise, 205, 231.
Pour quoy, 866.
Poursaulx (je), 606.
Pourselayne, 259.
Pourtant que, 864.
Pourtente, 259.
Pour tout fin vray, 866.
Pourtraicte, 169.
Pourtrais (je), 526.
Pour ung beau neant, 865.

Pourueance, 257.
Pouruiance, 276.
Pouruoyance, 259.
Pousse (je), 458, 652.
Poussein, 204.
Pouste, 196.
Poutee, 236.
Pouuoir. Conjugaison du verbe *pouvoir*, 105.
Pouuoire, 257.
Poux, 259.
Pouylle (je me), 525.
Poyement, 147.
Poylle (un), 158.
Poylle (une), 158.
Poyllu, 301.
Poynson, 165, 199.
Poynté, 256.
Poyrette, 197.
Poyse (je), 770.
Poix (un), 158.
Poix (une), 158.
Practique, 218.
Practique (je), 530.
Praerie, 206.
Praierie, 244.
Praye, 257.
Precelle (je), 664.
Preche, 266.
Precogite (je), 755.
Prée, 159.
Preferre (je), 664.
Prefigure (je), 664.
Prefixe (je), 434, 647.
Preheminence, 213, 241.
Preignent, 97.
Premier, 794.
Premier que, 802.
Pren, 97.
Prennes, 146.
Prennez (vous), 94.
Prennon (nous), 94.
Prens a mary (je), 778.
Prens castille (je), 544.
Prens cueur en pance (je), 748.
Prens de la (je me), 656.
Prens la vue (je), 441.

Page 1119

Prens mon esme (je), 442.
Prens noyse (je), 421.
Prens regard (je), 649.

Priue (je), 464.
Priueur, 279.
Priuosté, 235.

Prospere (je), 555, 668.
Proteruité, 223.
Prothonotaire, 259.

Preunciateresse, 189.
Preordonne (je), 664.
Preparatiue, 258.
Prépositions, 137. --Leurs accidents, 138-141.
Presbitoire, 174.
Presbitoyre, 252.
Presseur, 258.
Pressouer, 258.
Prest, 62, 321.
Preste (je), 606.
Presteté, 261.
Prestres, 221.
Prestresse, 258.
Presume (je me), 665.
Presumptueux, 325.
Pretende (je), 665.
Preu, 284, 523.
Preud, XLVIII.
Preude femme, 226.
Preudhomme, 226.
Preudhommie, 232.
Preuf, 258.
Preuue (je), 401, 668.
Preux, preuse, 330.
Preueance, 222.
Preuillege, 258.
Preuillege (je), 666.
Prieuré (une), 176.
Prieuresse, 258.
Primerolle, 258.
Primier, 349.
Premiere, 160.
Premierement, 17.
Prin, 274.
Pringalle, 217.
Prins. De prendre, XXXI, 87, 94.
Prioré, 258.
Pris, 224.
Prisonne (je), 663.
Priuat, 321.
Priuaulté, 218.
Priuaultez, 793.

Proaieul, 227.
Procède (je), 571.
Procure (je), 667.
Prodicieux, 327.
Prodiguement, 361.
Proesme, 172.
Proesse, 259.
Profundité, 213.
Progrede (je), 654.
Prolation, 286.
Prolongue (je), 667.
Promaine (il se), 344.
Promayne (je), 770.
Promaytz (je), 592.
Promes (je), 660.
Prommais (je), 565.
Promouue (je), 667.
Pronoms. Trois sortes principales: primitifs, dérivatifs, démonstratifs, XXIX. --Trois autres: relatifs, interrogatifs, numéraux, XXIX. --Ont six accidents: le genre, le nombre, la personne, les cas, la déclinaison et la composition, XXIX. --Leur division, 74. --Huit primitifs, 74, 331-346. --Douze dérivatifs, 74, 346-350. --Trois interrogatifs, 74, 350. --Deux relatifs, 75. --Un démonstratif simple et six composés, 75. --Partitifs et distributifs, 75. --Numéraux, 75, 367. --Accidents des pronoms, 76, 83.
Pronunciation, 286.
Prophecie, 259.
Prophesie, 20.
Propine (je), 529.
Proporcion, 259.
Propose (je), 434.
Propriaitaire, 250.
Prore, 222.
Prose. Manière de lire la prose française à haute voix, 56, 62.

Prouffit, 195.
Prouende, 259.
Prouulgue (je), 668.
Ps. Comment *ps* se prononce en français, 21.
Psalme, 21.
Psaltere, 21.
Psaltier, 265.
Psealme, 172.
Publique, 308.
Publique (bien), 207.
Puche, 221.
Pugnition, 256.
Pugniz, 229.
Puisne, 291.
Pulpitre, 259.
Punaisie, 276.
Punaysie, 432.
Punctuer, 661.
Purge (je), 670.
Purifie (je), 484.
Pus (je), 736.
Putairie, 312.
Putayner, 570.
Putaynier, 232.
Puteau, 203.
Putelle, 287.
Putte, 160.
Puiz, 547.

Q

Q; comment il se prononce, 34.
Quacquet, 196.
Quacquette (je), 486.
Quadrant, 213.
Quaille, 259.
Quaillebotte (je), 676.
Quanque, 364.
Quant de foys, 142.
Quant Dieu plaira, 660.
Quantesfoys, 800.
Quantesfoys que, 858.

Page 1120

Quantes gens, 352.
Quant et quant, 142.
Quant onc, 814.
Quaresme, 9, 238.
Quaresme pregnant, 267.
Quarreau, 223.
Quarriere, 259.
Quarron, 288.
Quarte, 257.
Quasi, 873.
Que (qui), 64.
Que grandes que petites, 646.
Quelconques au singulier, quelz conques au pluriel, 82, 298.
Quelcun, 82.
Quelleconques, quellesconques, 82.
Quelqun, XXIX.
Quenoille, 263.
Quere, 346.
Querelle ung action (je), 621.
Queste (je), 446.
Questueux, 37, 313.
Queuue, 218.
Queuue, queuue, 236.
Queux (une), 166.

R

R; sa prononciation, XIX, 22, 24, 34.
Raal, 262.
Rabatu, 306.
Rabblor, 26.
Rabetture, 260.
Rabille (je), 425, 682.
Rabilleur, 215.
Racaille (je), 654.
Rachatte (je), 682.
Raconvoye (je), 498.
Racquassure, 260.
Racquet, 260.
Racroupis (je me), 705.
Radote (je me), 525.
Radresse (je), 528.
Raffarde (je), 639, 678.
Raffolle (je), 773.
Ragrauante (je), 650.
Raiges, 290.
Raillieux, 306.
Raine (je), 691.
Raine, 21.
Raise (que je), 397.
Ralias, 262.

Rapteur, 261.
Rasibus, 669.
Rasibus la terre, 836.
Rasierse, 286.
Rasisse (que je), 397.
Rasouer, 261.
Rassis (je me), 698.
Rassiseté, 264.
Rataings (je), 649.
Rate, 266.
Rateaux, 257.
Ratecelle (je), 488.
Ratelle (je), 442.
Ratillier, 260.
Ratisse (je), 678.
Ratisseur, 215.
Ratissouer, 207.
Rattayns (je), 681.
Ratte, 239.
Rattelet, 290.
Raude (je), 570, 689.
Raume, 221.
Raualle (je), 449.
Raualue (je), 540.
Rauance (je), 555.
Rauaulde (je), 461, 655.
Raele (je), 546.

Queuerchief, 209.
Que uoulientiers que enuys,
840.
Qui (que), 185, 390.
Quict, 313.
Quiers (je), 708.
Quieté, 276.
Quil (qui il), 882.
Quit, 322.
Quitance, 260.
Quite (je), 435.
Quitte (je me), 567.
Quocquetier, 233.
Quocqueu, 207.
Quocquille, 8, 265.
Quoquetiere, 290.
Quoqz, 25.
Quoye, 383.
Quoyement, 842.
Quoyn, 260.
Quoynier, 260.

Page 1121

Rebras, 247.
Rebrouce (je), 552.
Rebroucé, 327.
Recelée, 231.
Recept, 261.
Recepte, 261.
Recepueur, 261.
Recercelle (je), 504, 760.
Rechief (de), 145.
Rechigne, 225.
Rechigne (je), 568.
Rechigne (je me), 773.
Rechignée, 241.
Rechine (je), 643.
Reciteur, 261.
Reclame (je), 473.
Reclayme (je), 681.
Reclice, 239.
Reconnaissance, 236.
Recomfort, 272.
Recommandation, 219.
Reconcile (je), 619.
Recongnoys (je), 474.
Recontinue (je), 496.
Reconuoyer, 605.
Recordation, 262.
Recort, 261.
Recoupe (je), 505.
Recouuerance, 261.
Recouuers (je), 562.
Recoyse (je), 589.
Recrastiner, 37.
Recreance, 262.
Recreant, 758.
Recroys (je), 556.
Recueil, 389.
Recueilt, 394.
Redargue (je), 415, 680.
Redicte, 213, 224.
Redige (je), 682.
Redime (je), 682.
Redis (je), 560.
Redolent, 322.
Redonde (je), 577, 682.
Redonde (je me), 778.
Redouble (je), 682.
Redoublément, 835.

Rallion, 201.
Ralongie (je), 527.
Ralongis (je), 527.
Rame (je), 666, 735.
Ramenteuoyr, 393.
Ramentus (je), 396.
Ramme, 262.
Ramme (je), 678.
Ramollie (je), 439.
Ramon, 197.
Ramponne (je), 678.
Ramosne, 260.
Ranc, 194, 260.
Rancune (je), 679.
Randon, 285.
Ranu, 2.
Ranuere, 289.
Rap, 261.
Rapeissure, 252.
Rapineux, 314.

Rauerdis (je), 474.
Rauerdis (je me), 775.
Rauissable, 322.
Rauissaige, 261.
Raun, 280.
Ray, 272.
Rayant, 323.
Raye (je), 477.
Rayere, 277.
Rayne, 261.
Rayns, 183.
Rays (je), 662.
Rebauldis (je me), 683.
Rebecq, 211.
Rebecquet, 220.
Rebellerie, 261.
Rebomdys (je), 680.
Rebout, 259.
Reboute (je), 671.
Reboutement, 259.

Redoubtable, 311.
Refaytie (je), 682.
Refectionne (je), 682.
Refectoyr, 222.
Refelle (je), 682.
Reflagre (je), 722.
Reflamboye (je), 551.
Reflecte (je), 682.
Reflection, 261.
Reflotte (je), 531.
Refouleure, 204.
Refouille (je), 560.
Refraigne (je), 559.
Refraygnaige, 261.
Refraynt, 261.
Refraytoir, 222.
Refrenir, 682.
Refreschys (je), 682.
Refroidure, 209.
Refroigneure, 241.
Refulge (je), 703.
Regalité, 273.
Regarde par dessus (je), 648.
Regibement, 289.
Reginal, 321.
Registre (je), 683.
Regnardie, 210.
Regnart, 210.
Regnateresse, 290.
Regnateur, 261.
Regnette, 240.
Regnie (je), 686.
Regracie (je), 567.
Regrete (je me), 626.
Regreteur, 215.
Reguerdonne (je), 690.
Reigle, 264.
Rejecte (je), 683.
Relaise (je), 628, 684.
Relaueur, 287.
Relieusement, 263.
Relinquis (je), 556.
Relucence, 267.
Remanant, 262.
Remanoyr, 393.
Remayne (je), 684.
Remembre (je), 474.

Remembraunce, 262.
Remercys, 280.
Remire (je), 447.
Remire (je me), 447.
Remord, remorde, 314.
Remorde (je), 442.
Remors (je), 685.
Remort, 228.
Remotion, 262.
Remouement, 290.
Remouuer, 551.
Renchiere, 165.
Renchiere (je me), 774.
Reneuer, 685.
Renfroigne, 241.
Reng, 260.
Rengoiserie, 204.
Rengorge (je), 550.
Renoiant, 312.
Renomme (je), 730.
Renoye (je), 556.
Rentreture, 200.
Renuerce (je), 650.
Repaire (je), 582.
Repais (je), 443.
Repast, 244.
Repaye (je), 686.
Repayse (je), 589.
Repel, 262.
Repent (il me), 557.
Repentence, 262.
Repentin, 324.
Repeue, 196.
Reposte (je), 711.
Repostaille, 280.
Reproachable, 322.
Reprouche, 62, 261.
Reprouche (je), 415.
Reproué, 322.
Repugne (je), 687.
Repulce, 259.
Repulse (je), 671.
Repulsé, 321.
Requereur, 213.
Requerte, 54.
Requereur, 262.
Requoy, 268.

Requoy (à), 429.
Res a res, 835.
Res a res le bort, 834.
Reschigne (je), 614.
Resconce (je), 584.
Rescons (je), 584.
Rescoue (je), 688.
Rescous (je), 687.
Rescousse, 262.
Rescoux, 322.
Resée, 259.
Reseiche (je me), 774.
Resemblable, 317.
Resemble (je), 427.
Resent, 319.
Resistance, 224, 628.
Resjoÿr, 12.
Resne, 260.
Resolue (je), 688.
Resonnableté, 262.
Resort, 36, 262.
Respandeur, 266.
Respit, 23.
Respite (je), 673.
Resplens (je), 703.
Responce, 194.
Respondant, 278.
Responde, 337.
Responsif, 305.
Ressigner, 285.
Ressoigne (je), 475.
Ressonne (je), 688.
Ressors (je), 688.
Restarderie, 268.
Reste, 262.
Restif, 311.
Resume (je), 689.
Resuscitation, 212.
Resue (je), 678.
Resueil, 287.
Resuerie, 291.
Retardis (je me), 777.
Retenance, 231.
Reteurs, 283.
Retors (je), 764.
Retortille (je), 760, 782.
Retraict, 258.

Retrais (je), 453.
Retributeur, 262.
Retz, 167, 202.
Reuenche (je me), 440, 689.
Reuene (je), 528.
Reuenues, 210.
Reueration, 232.
Reuerdoyer, 774.
Reuerende (je), 690.
Reuerendis (je), 690.
Reuerse (je), 690.
Reuestoir, 284.
Reuigore (je), 417, 507.
Reuilement, 260.
Reuire (je), 759.
Reuiue (je), 507.
Reuocque (je), 474.
Reuolue (je), 477.
Rhiotte, 263.
Riagal, 261.
Ribaudaille, 8.
Ribauldaille, 68.
Ribauldeau, 271.
Ribault, 68.
Ricaldes, 209.
Ridées, 692.
Riens, 71, 144.
Riens fors tant, 851.
Riens qui soyt, 851.
Rifflantes, 788.
Riffle (je), 500.
Riffleur, 227.
Rigeur, 277.
Righeur, 263.
Rigle (je), 695.
Riglet, 256.
Rigolle (je me), 817.
Rigoreux, 312.
Rigoulaige, 277.
Rigouraige, 277.
Rime, 263, 272.
Riotoux, 322.
Riotte (je), 720.
Risme, 263.
Risme (je), 691.
Riue en aigneaux (je), 632.
Riuierette, 240.

Robbe, XL.
Roberie, 263.
Rochiers, 63.
Rocquet, 274.
Rocquette, 263.
Rodelle, 264.
Roelle, 264.
Roialme, 236.
Roid, 323.
Roigne, 265.
Roigneure, 266.
Roigneuseté, 265.
Roigneux, 323.
Roisine, 264.
Rolle, 171, 263, 268.
Rolle (je), 693.
Romant, 213.
Romfle (je), 694.
Romfleure, 264.
Rommarin, 264.
Rommenye, 264.
Rompera (il), XLI.
Rondelle, 264.
Rondesse, 264.
Rondis (je), 777.
Rongeur dor, 206.
Rongeur, 198.
Rongne, 463.
Rongnieure, 267.
Rongyr, 788.
Ronnelle, 225.
Rosaicque, 322.
Rosette, 193.
Rosne, 156.
Rosticeur, 208.
Roucyn, 232.
Rouille (je), 662.
Roulet, 263, 277.
Roulliz, 282.
Rouseau, 261.
Rousee, 213.
Rousette, 233.
Roussine (je), 745.
Routte, 264.
Routte (je), 447.
Routtement, 199.
Rouuayson, 211.

Page 1123

Royaulme, 172.
Royere, 222.
Royn, XXV. --Prononcez reyne,
14.
Royngneux, 465.
Roysin, 154.
Ruant, 275.
Rubant, 264.
Rubifie (je), 695.
Rubriche, 263.
Rudeur, 264.
Rue en bas (je), 649.
Rue jus (je), 477.
Ruellette, 240.
Ruisselet, 240.
Rus, 271.
Ruse (je me), 500.
Rusterie, 403.
Rustrie (je), 403.
Rutile (je), 703.
Rymoye (je), 691.

S

S; sa prononciation, 24, 36. --

Saigefol, 214.
Saigement, 145.
Saincteté, 232.
Saincture a ecurser, 283.
Saisis (je), 673.
Saisonnez, 772.
Sajette, 195.
Salere (je), 584, 690.
Salle (je), 663.
Sallere (je), 690.
Sallette, 252.
Sally, 305.
Salouer, 257.
Saluable, 323.
Saluation, 265.
Salva (il se), 161.
Saluegarde, 259.
Sammedy, 265.
Sancté, 232.
Sanglout, 272, 291.
Sangloutement, 272.
Sanguineur, 265.
Sang meslé, 829.
Sans plus, 872.

Sauuaigeté, 289.
Sauuance, 265.
Sauagine, 255.
Saueté, 265.
Sauine, 265.
Sayette, 202.
Sayne, 156.
Sc, comment il se prononce
dans scavoir, 22.
Scandeleux, 323.
Scavance, 236.
Scay (je), 474.
Scilence, 168.
Scopuleux, 322.
Sculpture, 23.
Se, conjonction devant un mot
qui commence par une voyelle,
45.
Seanteté, 269.
Sechesse, 215.
Secheur, 269.
Secource (je), 661.
Secretie, 268.
Secz, 39.

Comme terminaison du pluriel, XXVI, XXVIII. --Comme figurative des verbes de la troisième conjugaison, XXXI. -- Comme terminaison de la seconde personne singulier dans les verbes, XXXIII.
 Sables, 264.
 Sace (je), 706.
 Sache (je), 700.
 Sacieté, 223.
 Sacquement, 264.
 Sacz, 25.
 Sadement, 843.
 Saffre, 286, 308.
 Saffronneux, 323.
 Safre, 176.
 Sagittation, 267.
 Saichant, 135.
 Saiche, 268.
 Saiche (je), 462, 563.
 Saige, 76.
 Saige cocque, 357.
 Sansue, 232.
 Sans sy, 594.
 Saoulle (je), 535.
 Sarazinesme, 231.
 Sarbatane, 283.
 Sasse, 307.
 Sassé, 307.
 Sathelite, 265.
 Satisfie (je), 698.
 Saucier, 784.
 Saulce, 265.
 Saulcier, 265.
 Saulge, 264.
 Saulmeure, 201, 265.
 Saulmon, 222.
 Sauls (je), 492, 606.
 Saulture, 291.
 Saultz, 25.
 Saulue (je), 698.
 Saulueconduyt, 179.
 Saulueur, 265.
 Sautelle (je), 587, 719.
 Sautreau, 227.

Segret, 268.
 Segrette, 202, 268.
 Seiche (je), 528.
 Seicheur, 484.
 Seigne (je), 444.
 Seignée, 239.
 Seigneuriaige, 235.
 Seigneurieux, 317.
 Seignieurys (je), 695.
 Seigneurieuseté, 240.
 Sejourneur, 272.
 Selle (je), 708.
 Selle a ribauldes, 211.
 Sellier, 265.
 Semblableté, 239.
 Semblance, 239.
 Seme, 265.
 Semitiere, 205.
 Semons, 433.
 Semons (je), 419, 454.
 Sendal, 203.
 Sene, 323.
 Senestre (au), 144.

Page 1124

Senglante (je), 729.
 Sengle, 270.
 Sengloutte (je), 724.
 Senil, 305.
 Sente, 198.
 Sentement, 219.
 Sentencie (je), 595.
 Sentu, 670.
 Seoyr, 109.
 Sep, 275.
 Separaison, 165, 196.
 Septier, 260.
 Septre, 269.
 Sepulcral, 306.
 Sepulture (je), 451.
 Serain, 307.
 Serancq, 231.
 Serant, 231.
 Serayne, 244.
 Serche (je), 537.
 Sercheur, 269.
 Serieuseté, 269.
 Serment, 211.
 Sermente (je me), 745.
 Sermente (je), 746.
 Sermonne (je), 702.
 Serot, 242.
 Serpente (une), 155.
 Serpilon, 287.
 Serre, 265.
 Sers du tateur (je), 716.
 Serurgien, 238.
 Serue (une), 155.
 Seruiableté, 269.
 Sery, 307.
 Seuls (je), I wont, XXXVI. -- Conjugaison de ce verbe, 103.
 Seur, 270.
 Seurcot, 285.
 Seure (je), 620.
 Seurlimé, 261.
 Seurourge, 201.
 Seurs, 62.
 Seurté, 185, 269.
 Sexterie, 269.
 Sextier, 244.
 Seyn, 269.
 Si, si fait si, 146.
 Si a escient, 842.
 Si aynsi soit que, 879.
 Siceaux, 266.
 Si comme, 831, 873.
 Sidere, 175.
 Sie, 229.
 Sie (je), 698.
 Sieur, 262.
 Sieure dais, 265.
 Sieute, 278.
 Signacle, 281.
 Signeau, 224.
 Signifiance, 270.
 Sil ny soyt, 876.
 Si mayt Dieu, 866.
 Siminiau, 270.
 Simoniacq, 270.
 Simplesse, 270.
 Sinelle, 230.
 Sinestre, 159, 317.
 Singalle, 225.
 Single (je), 696.
 Singularise (je), 713.
 Singulier (nombre), 67.
 Sinue (je), 607.
 Sion, 165.
 Si petit que non, 850.
 Si que, 885.
 Siseau, 204.
 Siseletz, 182.
 Si tres, 453.
 Si trestant, 467.
 Si tres au vif, 842.
 Si tresfort, 483.
 Sobersault, 272.
 Sobresse, 272.
 Sobreté, 272.
 Socourans, 61.
 Soing, 203.
 Solace, 272.
 Solail, 246.
 Solas, 272.
 Solayl, 272.
 Solempnellement, 803.
 Solempnise (je), 724.

Solempnité, 272.
 Solier, 272.
 Solle, 272.
 Sombresault, 179.
 Sombreuseté, 241.
 Sombreux, 317.
 Sommage, 248.
 Sommaige, 282.
 Somme (je), 725.
 Sommeilleux, 324.
 Sommel, 271.
 Sommier, 272.
 Somneil, 271.
 Songe (je), 723.
 Songeart, 216.
 Sonne a bransle (je), 691.
 Sonoreux, 317.
 Sophisterie, 272.
 Sorcerie, 272.
 Sorcerye, 289.
 Sorrel, 272.
 Sorte (un), 158.
 Sortis (je), 477.
 Sortisement, 291.
 Sortissans, 430.
 Sortys (je), 633.
 Sotoual, 269.
 Sottie, 221.
 Soublage (je), 531.
 Soubstrayre, 26.
 Soubtiens (je), 769.
 Soubtil, 312.
 Soubtillité, 271.
 Soubtiue (je), 597.
 Soubz, 25.
 Soubz brun, 307.
 Soubzdoyen, 278.
 Soubzris (je me), 722.
 Soubzterrine, 328.
 Soucye, 226.
 Soudeur, 273.
 Souef, 324.
 Souffers (je), 554.
 Souffretté, 247.
 Soufisant, 326.
 Soufraité, 247.
 Souilliart, 271.

- Souillon, 214.
 Soulace (je), 490.
 Souldain, 23.
 Soulde, 273.
 Souldoier, 273.
 Souldure, 208.
 Souldz, 266.
 Souls (je), 438.
 Souple (je), 353.
 Sourcille (je me), 599.
 Sourdesse, 212.
 Soure (je), 588.
 Souré, 261.
 Souris, 201.
 Sours (je), 692.
 Soursault, 273.
 Sousbasse, 222.
 Sousie, 243.
 Souspescionne (je), 638.
 Souspir, 270.
 Soustiens (je), 415.
 Soutif, 324.
 Souuentes fois, 144.
 Souuentes foys, 858.
 Souueraigne, 331.
 Souuerainté, 273.
 Souuiegne vous, 534.
 Souyllart, 424.
 Souerain, 307.
 Souerayn liege, 238.
 Spaciosité, 237, 273.
 Sparme, 172.
 Specieux, 312.
 Specifijer, 6.
 Speciosité, 63, 198.
 Specule (je), 589.
 Spiquenarde, 274.
 Spiritual, 314.
 Splendeur, 22.
 Sponde, 197.
 Stacion, 262.
 Stellifie (je), 714.
 Stolidité, 221.
 Stomachation, 204, 223.
 Strayne, 240.
 Strideur, 22, 273.
 Studiosité, 249.
 Suade (je), 537.
 Suasion, 234.
 Subdiacre, 278.
 Subject, 326.
 Subjecte (je), 442.
 Subjugation, 278.
 Sublim, 315.
 Substancieux, 313.
 Substentacle, 37, 280.
 Substrays (je), 531.
 Subtile (je me), 491.
 Subtillité, 215.
 Subuercion, 282.
 Subuertion, 214.
 Subuertis (je), 649.
 Suce (je), 742.
 Succint, 323.
 Suce (je), 723.
 Sueuf, 326.
 Suffert, 60.
 Sufflet, 199.
 Suffocquer, 465.
 Suffragan, 273.
 Suffrance, 278.
 Suffreteux, 319.
 Suis (je), conjugaison du verbe *être*, 125.
 Suis bien de (je), 426.
 Suis desalteré (je), 580.
 Suis mal de (je), 428.
 Suis suffisant (je), 421.
 Suis vayn (je), 543.
 Subjecte (je), 467.
 Sulphre, 176.
 Sumiterre, 278.
 Summation, 286.
 Summité, 230.
 Sumptueux, 23, 308.
 Sumtuosité, 278.
 Superaltare, 494.
 Superfice, 250.
 Superficialité, 278.
 Superhabundamment, 852.
 Suppedite (je), 757.
 Supportation, 285.
 Supporte (je), 650.
 Supprime (je), 598.
 Surachapte (je), 647.
 Surcouche (je), 648.
 Surcroys (je), 533.
 Surcuyde (je me), 654.
 Sur entre, 795.
 Surfays (je), 743.
 Surfons (je), 662.
 Chirurgie, 278.
 Surglice (je), 649.
 Surhabunder, 19.
 Surlaboure (je me), 648.
 Surmonte (je), 541.
 Sureille (je), 694.
 Surot, 274.
 Surpence (je me), 755.
 Surpense (je me), 453.
 Surquanie, 233, 285.
 Surquayne, 231.
 Surre, 325.
 Surrends (je), 567.
 Surrens (je), 452.
 Surreste (je), 655.
 Surreste (je me), 689.
 Sursault, 138.
 Surseme (je), 741.
 Sur toute riens, 836.
 Surunde (je), 577.
 Suruene, 211, 273.
 Suruoys (je), 648.
 Sus, 216, 794, 797.
 Suspecon, 28, 245.
 Suspecion, 278.
 Suspeconeux, 326.
 Suspencion, 245, 884.
 Suspense (je), 744.
 Suspicious, 326.
 Suyerie, 273.
 Suyeux, 325.
 Suyez, 752.
 Sydere, 275.
 Sygoygne, 277.
 Symment, 270.
 Synnelle, 230.

T

T; sa prononciation, 37.
 Tableau aux eschecz, 204.

- Tabour, 279.
 Taboure (je), 659.
 Tabourin, 279.
 Tabourine (je), 746.
 Taiche (je), 569.
 Taille, 279.
 Taincture, 213.
 Taincturier, 213, 238.
 Taings (je), 515.
 Taisniere, 208.
 Talpe, 246.
 Tandis que, 856.
 Tanne (je me), 778.
 Tanny, 2.
 Tanny garensé, 213.
 Tant que, 856.
 Tant seulement, 847.
 Tanure, 210.
 Tapis (je), 499.
 Tappis, 279.
 Tapynet, 276.
 Tardifueté, 271.
 a six: le présent, le parfait, le futur, et les trois divisions du parfait, l'imparfait, l'indéfini, le plus que parfait, XXXII. --
 Formation des temps, XXXII.
 Tentation, 279.
 Tentatoire, 279.
 Tence (je), 463.
 Tenceresse, 68, 154.
 Tencerie, 200.
 Tenceur, 68, 154.
 Tenche, 279.
 Tencon, 28, 200.
 Tend, 280.
 Tende, 280.
 Tendron, 228.
 Tenement, 4.
 Tenne (il me), 414, 593.
 Tenneure, 280.
 Tenue, 280.
 Terciennes, 280.
 Terroire, 208.
 Tiens en aguayt (je me), 441.
 Tiens fort (je me), 449.
 Tiens playt (je), 587.
 Tiercellet, 280.
 Tieule, 281.
 Tieulle, 281.
 Tieulx, 82.
 Tiffe (je), 758.
 Tigneux, 265.
 Tiliac, 229.
 Tiltre, 23.
 Tintyn, 281.
 Tirant, 281.
 Tire, 282.
 Tire auant (je), 654.
 Tirouer, 240.
 Tisane, 281.
 Tissutier, 209.
 Toille, 8.
 Toles (je), 747.
 Tollere (je), 534.
 Tonliu, 281.

Targe, 279.
Targe (je), 612.
Targue, 279.
Tarrys (je), 529.
Tart, 143.
Tartarique, 315.
Tastement, 219.
Tatin, 270.
Tauldis, 251.
Taulx, 279.
Tauxe (je), 710.
Tayche, 208.
Taye, 200.
Taye (un), 158.
Taylles, 184.
Tays (je me), 587.
Tect, 231.
Tecteur, 226.
Teignon, 265.
Temperise (je me), 639
Temperure, 279.
Temple (une), 158.
Templete, 279.
Temprif, 306, 327.
Temps. Dans les verbes il y en

Terme (je), 707.
Terminance, 213, 220.
Terrienne, 63.
Terrification, 219.
Terris (je me), 781.
Terrouer, 272.
Terslet, 279.
Tesmoignage, 261.
Tesmoigne (je), 451.
Teste, 54.
Teste (un), 158.
Testiere, 230.
Testifement, 836.
Testu, 307.
Testyf, 777.
Teurs (je), 785.
Th; comment *th* se prononce en français, 19.
Theorique, 274.
Thesme, 281.
Thoreau, 20, 155.
Throsne, 57.
Thyeme, 173.
Thyme, 281

Tonnelet, 187.
Tonnement, 280.
Tonnoyrre, 175.
Tonse (que je), 397.
Tonsé (j'ay), 645.
Toppée, 203.
Tor, 202.
Torche (je), 662.
Torconnier, 218.
Toreau, 20.
Tormente, 63.
Tormentée, 5.
Torneur, 284.
Torterelle, 281.
Torteu, 15.
Tortemoue, 290.
Tortfait, 291.
Tost, 812.
Toste (je), 760.
Tostée, 282.
Touaille, 282.
Touaylle, 282.
Touche, 282.
Touche la (je), 739.

Page 1127

Toult, 25.
Toupin, 282.
Touque, 202.
Tourbiginaulx, 290.
Tourmentine, 284.
Tournay, 282.
Tournement, 282.
Tournettes, 184.
Tournoire, 267.
Tourquois, 282.
Tout, 872.
Tout a deliure, 829.
Tout ades, 808.
Tout adez, 814.
Tout a force, 829.
Tout a heurt, 829.
Tout asteure, 877.
Tout a tart, 803.
Tout aynsi que, 877.
Tout de hayt, 830.
Tout dune tire, 830.
Tout dung tenant, 872.
Toute jour, 298.
Tout en apert, 830.
Toute riens, 298, 847.
Toutes foys et quantes, 858.
Toutesuoyes, 881.
Tout fin mayntenant, 806.
Tout fin, 808.
Tout hony, 694.
Tout hors, 529.
Tout mort, 842.
Tout outre, 842.
Tout playn dinjures, 878.
Tout quanque, 859.
Toye, 287.
Trac, 276.
Trace (je), 678, 708.
Tractif, 326.
Trafficque, 210.
Traict, 215.
Traict de temps, 278.
Traicte, 234.
Trainelle (je), 760.
Traire, 64.
Tranchafon, 200.

Trancys (je), 656.
Transis (je me), 745.
Translate (je), 761.
Transmontaigne, 280.
Transnage (je), 745.
Transnoue (je), 745.
Transpasse (je), 654.
Trappe (je), 761.
Trappier, 666.
Trasse, 265.
Trasse (je), 770.
Trasser, 389.
Trauaille denfant (je), 600.
Trays, 282.
Trays (je), 526.
Trehouchet, 254.
Trebusche (je), 477.
Trecherie, 282.
Tref, 228.
Trelis, 227.
Tremaille (je), 586.
Trempe (je me), 639.
Trenchant, 216.
Trenchaysonne (je), 569.
Trenche (je), 502, 761.
Trenche le chemyn (je), 572.
Trenchée, 282.
Trenchouer, 282.
Trenteyne, 282.
Trepude, 212.
Treschange (je), 482.
Tresluis (je), 476.
Tresluys (je), 564.
Tresourier, 282.
Trespas, 213.
Trespasse (je), 648.
Trespece (je), 660.
Tresperce (je), 655.
Tressaulx (je), 463.
Tressouere, 200.
Tressue (je), 544.
Tresteau, 259.
Trestout, 82, 847.
Treté, 282.
Trette, 283.
Treue (je), 104.

Treuaige, 283.
Triacle, 283.
Tribouille (je), 704.
Trilis, 227.
Tripe (je), 553.
Triquette (je), 553.
Trippes, 273.
Triquette (je), 723.
Triumphamment, 798.
Triumphe, 174, 225.
Trocque (je), 444.
Troignette, 240.
Troignon, 208.
Trompeteur, 283.
Tronchet, 199.
Tronson, 209.
Trop mieulx, etc. 390, 850.
Tropelle (je), 552.
Troppeau, 230.
Trottier, 283.
Trousse (je), 763.
Troussure, 283.
Truaige, 230.
Truandaille, 277.
Truandeau, 240.
Truffant bourdant, 832.
Truffe, 233, 281.
Truffe (je), 589.
Truffle (je), 460, 589.
Trumeau, 282.
Trumpette, 283.
Tue la chandelle (je), 525.
Tugurion, 278.
Tuismes (nous), 396.
Tumbe, 283.
Tumbe (je), 544.
Tumbeau, 382.
Tumber, 37, 147.
Tumbreau, 283.
Turbateur, 283.
Turbillon, 279.
Turterelle, 155.
Turtre, 155.
Tuytion, 867.
Tyltre, 281.
Tymbre (je), 659.

Typhayne, 283.
 Tyrannise (je), 541.
 Tyre (je), 571.
 Tyre des tallons (je), 656.
 Tyreur de layne, 289.
 Tys (je), 462.
 Tysceu, 330.

U (VOYELLE.)

U; sa prononciation, 7. --
 Distinction de *u* voyelle et de *u*
 consonne, 10. --Après *f, g, q*,
 XVII. --Prononciation de l'*u*,
 même quand il n'est pas écrit
 dans le mot, 9. --Ne se
 prononce pas dans quelques
 mots où il se trouve, 9.
 Ui, diphthongue; sa
 prononciation, XVIII, 16.
 Ule (je), 587, 785.
 Ululation, 210, 233.
 Ulule (je), 587.
 Umbrageux, 323.
 Umbraige, 266.
 Umbre, 176.
 Umbre (je), 699.
 Umbroye (je me), 610.
 Umbroye (je), 699.
 Undee, 215.
 Undette, 239.
 Une foyz pour tout, 859.
 Unes: unes chaucez, unes
 tenailles, unes lunettes, XXVI. -
 -Unes nopces, unes lettres, XL.
 Unesfoys, 803.
 Ung petit, 875.
 Ung pour ung, 710.
 Ung tantinet, 774.
 Ung tour de passe pas, 833.
 Ungle, 247.
 Ungz: ungz sufflets, ungz
 ciseletz, XL. --Unes heures,
 152. --Ung ame, 153.

Uermillet, 303.
 Uermolu, 316.
 Uermoulys (je), 596.
 Uernal, 306.
 Uerrot, 278.
 Uers. Manière de lire des vers
 français à haute voix, 60, 64.
 Uesperée, 188.
 Uespilon, 165.
 Uespillon, 228.
 Uespre, 54.
 Uesquirent, 61.
 Uessaille, 270.
 Uessie (je), 780.
 Uests (je), 488.
 Uesture, 206.
 Ueu, de veoyr, XXXI.
 Uiaige, 284.
 Uibriquet, 253.
 Uiconte, 285.

Uppie, 289.
 Usaige (je), 769.
 Use, 286.
 Usite (je), 645.
 Ustencille, 277.
 Usure (je), 769.
 Util, 281.

U (CONSONNE.)

U; sa prononciation, 38.
 Uacabond, 284.
 Uacillation, 275.
 Uacque (il me), 423.
 Uaguabonde (je), 613.
 Uague (je), 772.
 Uaincs (je), 648.
 Ual, des deux genres, 161.
 Ualee, 211.
 Ualereux, 310.
 Ualeton, 291.
 Ualiance, 284.
 Ualitude, 230.
 Ualleton, 291.
 Ualue, 284.
 Uantaige (je), 765.
 Uantance, 210, 284.
 Uante, 210.
 Uanteur, 210.
 Variableté, 267.
 Variance, 213.
 Variant, 310.
 Uarie (je me), 428.
 Uariement, 204.
 Uarlet, 228.
 Uas (je men). Conjugaison de ce
 verbe, 123.
 Uas a jouc (je), 696.
 Uas a repos (je), 528.
 Uas en compas (je), 572.
 Uas eschays (je), 700.
 Uas mon bean bas trac (je men),
 570.
 Uas par saultées (je), 699.
 Uaudoyse, 289.
 Uauldrée, 223.

Uingt et ungiesme, 372.
 Uirole, 285.
 Uirsoet, 218.
 Uis (un), 158.
 Uisaige (je), 765.
 Uise, 185.
 Uise (je), 453, 633.
 Uise (je me), 614.
 Uisance, 285.
 Uitaille, 285.
 Uitaille (je), 766.
 Uitailler, 285.
 Uitupere, 175, 261.
 Uitupere (je), 456, 680.
 Uiuandier, 285.
 Uiuifie (je me), 677.
 Unismes (nous), 396.
 Uocifere (je), 501.
 Uoicture, 203.
 Uoicture (je), 476.

Uaulx (je), 431.
 Uaua, 275.
 Uaylable, 305.
 Uaynes, 349.
 Ueche, 219.
 Uecy, 146.
 Uefue, 287.
 Uegete (je), 705.
 Ueillart, 8, 249.
 Uela, 146.
 Uellu, 301.
 Ueloustier, 284.
 Uendaige, 269.
 Uendenge (je), 561.
 Uendible, 303.
 Uendredi auré, 811.
 Uenemeux, 327.
 Uenne (je), 443.
 Uent daumon, 273.
 Uentile (je me), 459.
 Uentille (je), 765.
 Uenturier, 242.
 Uenuste, 305.
 Uerart, 155.
 Uerbes. Deux sortes: personnel
 et impersonnel. Trois sortes de
 verbes personnels: parfait,
 anomal, défectif. Trois sortes
 de verbes parfaits: actif, passif,
 moyen. Trois sortes de
 conjugaisons du verbe actif,
 XXX. --Définition, 83. --Division,
 83. --Accidents des verbes, 83,
 137.
 Uerbie (je), 771.
 Uerdier, 222.
 Uerdoye (je me), 774.
 Ueredicque, 327.
 Ueresimilitude, 239.
 Uerges, 184.
 Uerglace (il), 558.
 Uergoigne, 8.
 Uergoigne (je), 619.
 Uergoigneux, 185.
 Uergondeement, 5.
 Uergongne (je me), 459.

Uoyagier, 199.
 Uoyelles. Toute voyelle se
 prononce, 17. --Uoyelles
 longues et brèves, 52.
 Uoyezcy, 146.
 Uoyezla, 146.
 Uoylable, 305.
 Uoyr vraymecques, 866.
 Uoyre, 146, 866.
 Uoyre vrayement, 866.
 Uoyroyseté, 225.
 Uoyrre, 175, 225.
 Uoyrryne (je), 535.
 Uoyst, 410.
 Uoystre (je me), 771.
 Uueil, 62, 255.
 Uueille. Vueille Dieu, XXXVI,
 104.
 Uueille ou non, 844.
 Uulgarise (je), 669.

Udance, 285.
Uidecoq, 289.
Uiel, 305.
Uielle, 249.
Uiellese, 249.
Uiens au dessus (je), 563.
Uieul, uieulle, 319.
Uieulx, 249.
Uieuse, 320.
Uigeur, 285.
Uigille, 288.
Uigille (je), 772.
Uilanie (je), 490.
Uilennye (je), 690.
Uilipendence, 269.
Uillaine, 63.
Uillainie, 205.
Uillayn, 307.
Uillement, 285.
Uillenastre, 224.
Uillennye, 285.
Uilote (je), 563, 613.
Uilotiere, 215, 271.
Uimpilon, 277.
Uineau, 253.
Uinettier, 285.

Voicturier, 203.
Uoidure, 273.
Uoierreux, 314.
Uoille, 8.
Uoille de sorbe, 225.
Uoirier, 225.
Uoiriere, 225.
Uoirra, 401.
Uoisineté, 247.
Uol, 207.
Uolenté, 289.
Uolentif, 329.
Uolet, 221.
Uolette (je), 552.
Uoluntaireté, 230.
Uoluntarieux, 329.
Uoue (je), 619.
Uouge, 198.
Uoulaige, 249.
Uoulenté, 159.
Uoulge, 169, 198.
Uouloir. Conjugaison de ce
verbe, 104.
Uoulsist. Voulsist Dieu, XXXVI,
104.
Uoult, 402.
Uous est il bien? 546.

Uulnere (je), 784.
Uuyde, 310.
Uyder ou uuyder, 12.

W

Wallon, 223.

X

X; sa prononciation, 22, 24, 38,
39. --Comme terminaison du
pluriel, XXVI, XXVIII. --
Comment il se prononce au
commencement des mots, 22.
Xenotrophe, 22.
Xylobalsome, 22.

Y

Y supprimé par ellipse, 413.
Ycelle, 82.
Yceluy, 82.
Ycestuy, 82.
Ydropisie, 215.
Yeman, 291.

Page 1130

Yeulx, 62.
Yndeux, 328.
Ypocript, 605.
Ypocrite, 177.
Yre, 235.
Yronde, 278.
Ys (je), 786.

Ytel, 82
Yueresse, 215.
Yuernaige, 289.
Yure (je), 622.
Yurer, 12.
Yuresse, 155.
Yuroigne, 155.

Z

Z comme terminaison du
pluriel, XXVI, XXVIII. --Ne
termine jamais un adjectif
singulier, XXVII, XXVIII.
Zelotipie, 233.

Page 1131

SOMMAIRE

DES MATIÈRES ET DES DIVISIONS

DE

LA GRAMMAIRE DE PALSgrave.

Épître de l'auteur au roi, I.
Privilège du roi, X.
Lettre d'André Baynton, XI.
Introduction pour l'intelligence des deux premiers livres, XV.
Introduction au livre second, XXIII.
Table des chapitres du premier livre, XLV.
Livre Ier, sur la bonne prononciation du français, 1.
Livre II, où il est traité des neuf parties du discours, 65.
Livre III, qui contient des développements sur les deux premiers, 151.
Table des substantifs, 193.
----des adjectifs, 305.
----des pronoms, 374.
----de certaines locutions, 375.
----des verbes, 414.
----des prépositions, 794.
----des adverbes, 800 et 802.
----des conjonctions, 872.
----des interjections, 888.

TABLE ALPHABÉTIQUE

DES MATIÈRES

CONTENUES DANS LA GRAMMAIRE DE DU GUEZ.

Acrostiches formant le nom de <i>Giles du Wes</i> , 893, 1017.	--La même et le trésorier de sa chambre, son mari d'adoption, sur l'amour, 1047. --La même et G. Du Guez sur l'âme, 1052. --La même et son aumônier: exposition de la messe, 1063. -- Les mêmes, sur les noms et propriétés des mets, 1070. Division du temps, 1078. Engenouiller (se), conjugué, 1009. Être, conjugué, 987. Faire, conjugué parallèlement avec <i>être</i> , 1011. Faire (le), conjugué, 1004. Futur de l'indicatif, 933. Impératif, 934. Indicatif présent (formation de l'), 930. Le faire, 1004. <i>Ll</i> ; comment se prononce, 901. - Dans les verbes, 1009. Lettres --à la princesse Marie pour s'excuser d'une absence, 1034; --à la même au nom de Jean Ap. Morgan, son écuyer tranchant, 1036. Loist (il me), conjugue, 1004. Mots et locutions, 921. Nomenclatures, voy. <i>Substantifs</i> . Optatif, 934.	Participes, adverbess, noms tirés des verbes, règle pour les former, 935. Plan de la Grammaire de Du Guez, 898. Porter (se), conjugué, 1003. Prépositions, 924. Prétérit imparfait, 932. Prétérit indéfini, 933. Prétérit parfait, 932. Prétérit plus que parfait, 933. Prologue du premier livre, 894;--autre, 898; --du second livre, 1019. Prononciation (règles de la), 899. Pronoms, 923. Querir, conjugué, 1007. Salutations (formules de), 918. Seulz (je), conjugué, 1004. <i>St</i> ; comment se prononce, 900 (règle V). Subjonctif, 935. Substantifs (liste de), 901. -- Parties du corps humain, 901. - -Qualités métaphysiques, 904. - -Toilette des femmes, 906. -- Mobilier d'une chambre, 908. -- Intérieur d'une cuisine, 909. -- Noms des oiseaux, 910. -- Fruits, 912. --Mets
--	---	--

Page 1134

--Venaison, 912. --Poissons, 913. --Noms des arbres, 914. -- Officiers royaux, 916. --Cris des animaux, 916. Table of this present Treatyse, 898. <i>U</i> élidé par les Picards dans <i>tu as, tu es</i> , 900.	Verbes (liste alphabétique de), 936. Verbes (deux), par exemple, <i>être</i> et <i>faire</i> , combinés dans une conjugaison parallèle, 1011. Vers de Du Guez; 893, 894, 1017, 1020; --au nom de lady Maltravers, sur un proverbe, 1026.	--Épitaphe, 1032. --Vers d'excuse à propos d'une indisposition, 1041. Voir, conjugué, 1001. Voyelles; règles de leur prononciation, 899 et suiv. Z, ajouté au singulier pour former le pluriel, 901.
--	--	--

Page 1135

NOTE DE L'ÉDITEUR.

Afin de mettre le lecteur en garde contre les inadvertances de la typographie anglaise, inadvertances que nous étions obligé de reproduire dans l'intérêt même de l'intégrité et de l'autorité du texte, nous signalerons ici trois fautes d'impression grossières dans une seule page, et très-peu remplie.

Dans les distiques latins de Léonard Coxe, imprimés au *verso* du titre (voy. le fac-similé), vers premier:

Gallica quisquis amas *axactè* verba sonare,

il faut lire *exactè*.

Dans les Phaleuques à Geoffroy Tory, vers 8:

Nec *Græcis* melius putaro Gazam
Instruxisse suos.....

lisez *Græcos*.

Et deux vers plus bas :

Seu quotquot *prætio* priùs fuère

La quantité veut qu'on rétablisse *pretio*, par *e* simple.

On pourrait voir une quatrième faute d'impression dans le vers suivant:

Hæc evolve mei *Palgravi* scripta disert.

Aucune règle ne prescrivant la suppression de l'*s* dans le nom latinisé de Palsgrave, cette altération de forme doit être le résultat d'une inexactitude typographique; le manuscrit donnait sans doute *Palsgravi*.

Les imprimeurs de Du Guez ne méritent pas plus de confiance que ceux de Palsgrave. Par exemple, à la page 928, vous verrez l'adverbe de nombre *fyrst* traduit en français *emprent*, comme s'il s'agissait de la 3e personne de l'indicatif du verbe *emprendre*, *il emprent*.

Il est indubitable qu'il faut lire *en preu*, apocope de *en pre(mier)*, ou tout d'un mot, *empreu*. Le drapier, parlant des six aunes de drap que lui demande Pathelin, dit à ce brave chaland, en lui présentant son aune à tenir:

Prenez-la: nous les aulneron;
Si sont elles cy sans rabattre.
(Il mesure le drap.)
Empreu, et deux, et trois, et quatre,
Et cinq, et six.

Page 1136

Selon toute apparence, l'acteur prononçait *empreut*, avec un *t* euphonique final, comme il est figuré dans le texte de Du Guez: ainsi la versification de *Pathelin* ne contenait pas dans ce passage l'hiatus que l'oeil croirait y surprendre. On ne saurait trop répéter que l'écriture est un faux témoin, surtout par rapport à l'ancien langage, et que la comparaison des erreurs peut conduire à la vérité.

Palsgrave, en vingt endroits, tombe avec une roideur impitoyable sur les pauvres imprimeurs français:

«Telle est l'ignorance de ces imprimeurs, qui ne connaissent pas leur propre langue.» (P. 293.)

«Mais c'est plutôt par l'ignorance des imprimeurs, qui ne connaissent pas leur propre langue.» (P. 300.)

En parlant de la perfection de la langue française: «Elle a été singulièrement corrompue par la négligence de ceux qui se mêlent de l'art d'imprimer.» (P. 163.)

«...Et combien le français est défiguré par la négligence des imprimeurs.» (P. 162.)

«J'en accuse la négligence, ou, pour mieux dire, l'ignorance des imprimeurs.» (P. 181.)

Le patriotisme de Palsgrave lui multipliait les fétus dans l'oeil de nos imprimeurs, et lui dissimulait les poutres dans l'oeil des imprimeurs anglais. Nous ne voulons pas ici récriminer, autrement il serait permis de demander où Palsgrave prend le droit de se montrer si rigoureux, et quels typographes illustres l'Angleterre du XVIe siècle peut mettre en concurrence de nos Vérard, Estienne, Simon de Colines, François et Sébastien Gryphe, Vascosan, et tant d'autres. Le moins inconnu qu'il fût possible de leur opposer est justement ce Pynson, qui a imprimé la première partie du livre de Palsgrave avec quatre fautes dès la première page.

Réimprimer Palsgrave, c'est reconnaître la valeur de son témoignage en général; par conséquent, il devenait nécessaire de protester, lorsque, sur un point de fait aussi important, son témoignage passionné pouvait induire en erreur.

F. G.

Updated editions will replace the previous one—the old editions will be renamed.

Creating the works from print editions not protected by U.S. copyright law means that no one owns a United States copyright in these works, so the Foundation (and you!) can copy and distribute it in the United States without permission and without paying copyright royalties. Special rules, set forth in the General Terms of Use part of this license, apply to copying and distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works to protect the PROJECT GUTENBERG™ concept and trademark. Project Gutenberg is a registered trademark, and may not be used if you charge for an eBook, except by following the terms of the trademark license, including paying royalties for use of the Project Gutenberg trademark. If you do not charge anything for copies of this eBook, complying with the trademark license is very easy. You may use this eBook for nearly any purpose such as creation of derivative works, reports, performances and research. Project Gutenberg eBooks may be modified and printed and given away—you may do practically ANYTHING in the United States with eBooks not protected by U.S. copyright law. Redistribution is subject to the trademark license, especially commercial redistribution.

START: FULL LICENSE

THE FULL PROJECT GUTENBERG LICENSE

PLEASE READ THIS BEFORE YOU DISTRIBUTE OR USE THIS WORK

To protect the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting the free distribution of electronic works, by using or distributing this work (or any other work associated in any way with the phrase “Project Gutenberg”), you agree to comply with all the terms of the Full Project Gutenberg™ License available with this file or online at www.gutenberg.org/license.

Section 1. General Terms of Use and Redistributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works

1.A. By reading or using any part of this Project Gutenberg™ electronic work, you indicate that you have read, understand, agree to and accept all the terms of this license and intellectual property (trademark/copyright) agreement. If you do not agree to abide by all the terms of this agreement, you must cease using and return or destroy all copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in your possession. If you paid a fee for obtaining a copy of or access to a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work and you do not agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement, you may obtain a refund from the person or entity to whom you paid the fee as set forth in paragraph 1.E.8.

1.B. “Project Gutenberg” is a registered trademark. It may only be used on or associated in any way with an electronic work by people who agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement. There are a few things that you can do with most Project Gutenberg™ electronic works even without complying with the full terms of this agreement. See paragraph 1.C below. There are a lot of things you can do with Project Gutenberg™ electronic works if you follow the terms of this agreement and help preserve free future access to Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. See paragraph 1.E below.

1.C. The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation (“the Foundation” or PGLAF), owns a compilation copyright in the collection of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. Nearly all the individual works in the collection are in the public domain in the United States. If an individual work is unprotected by copyright law in the United States and you are located in the United States, we do not claim a right to prevent you from copying, distributing, performing, displaying or creating derivative works based on the work as long as all references to Project Gutenberg are removed. Of course, we hope that you will support the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting free access to electronic works by freely sharing Project Gutenberg™ works in compliance with the terms of this agreement for keeping the Project Gutenberg™ name associated with the work. You can easily comply with the terms of this agreement by keeping this work in the same format with its attached full Project Gutenberg™ License when you share it without charge with others.

1.D. The copyright laws of the place where you are located also govern what you can do with this work. Copyright laws in most countries are in a constant state of change. If you are outside the United States, check the laws of your country in addition to the terms of this agreement before downloading, copying, displaying, performing, distributing or creating derivative works based on this work or any other Project Gutenberg™ work. The Foundation makes no representations concerning the copyright status of any work in any country other than the United States.

1.E. Unless you have removed all references to Project Gutenberg:

1.E.1. The following sentence, with active links to, or other immediate access to, the full Project Gutenberg™ License must appear prominently whenever any copy of a Project Gutenberg™ work (any work on which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” appears, or with which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” is associated) is accessed, displayed, performed, viewed, copied or distributed:

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere in the United States and most other parts

of the world at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at www.gutenberg.org. If you are not located in the United States, you will have to check the laws of the country where you are located before using this eBook.

1.E.2. If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is derived from texts not protected by U.S. copyright law (does not contain a notice indicating that it is posted with permission of the copyright holder), the work can be copied and distributed to anyone in the United States without paying any fees or charges. If you are redistributing or providing access to a work with the phrase “Project Gutenberg” associated with or appearing on the work, you must comply either with the requirements of paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 or obtain permission for the use of the work and the Project Gutenberg™ trademark as set forth in paragraphs 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.3. If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is posted with the permission of the copyright holder, your use and distribution must comply with both paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 and any additional terms imposed by the copyright holder. Additional terms will be linked to the Project Gutenberg™ License for all works posted with the permission of the copyright holder found at the beginning of this work.

1.E.4. Do not unlink or detach or remove the full Project Gutenberg™ License terms from this work, or any files containing a part of this work or any other work associated with Project Gutenberg™.

1.E.5. Do not copy, display, perform, distribute or redistribute this electronic work, or any part of this electronic work, without prominently displaying the sentence set forth in paragraph 1.E.1 with active links or immediate access to the full terms of the Project Gutenberg™ License.

1.E.6. You may convert to and distribute this work in any binary, compressed, marked up, nonproprietary or proprietary form, including any word processing or hypertext form. However, if you provide access to or distribute copies of a Project Gutenberg™ work in a format other than “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other format used in the official version posted on the official Project Gutenberg™ website (www.gutenberg.org), you must, at no additional cost, fee or expense to the user, provide a copy, a means of exporting a copy, or a means of obtaining a copy upon request, of the work in its original “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other form. Any alternate format must include the full Project Gutenberg™ License as specified in paragraph 1.E.1.

1.E.7. Do not charge a fee for access to, viewing, displaying, performing, copying or distributing any Project Gutenberg™ works unless you comply with paragraph 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.8. You may charge a reasonable fee for copies of or providing access to or distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works provided that:

- You pay a royalty fee of 20% of the gross profits you derive from the use of Project Gutenberg™ works calculated using the method you already use to calculate your applicable taxes. The fee is owed to the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, but he has agreed to donate royalties under this paragraph to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation. Royalty payments must be paid within 60 days following each date on which you prepare (or are legally required to prepare) your periodic tax returns. Royalty payments should be clearly marked as such and sent to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation at the address specified in Section 4, “Information about donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation.”
- You provide a full refund of any money paid by a user who notifies you in writing (or by e-mail) within 30 days of receipt that s/he does not agree to the terms of the full Project Gutenberg™ License. You must require such a user to return or destroy all copies of the works possessed in a physical medium and discontinue all use of and all access to other copies of Project Gutenberg™ works.
- You provide, in accordance with paragraph 1.F.3, a full refund of any money paid for a work or a replacement copy, if a defect in the electronic work is discovered and reported to you within 90 days of receipt of the work.
- You comply with all other terms of this agreement for free distribution of Project Gutenberg™ works.

1.E.9. If you wish to charge a fee or distribute a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work or group of works on different terms than are set forth in this agreement, you must obtain permission in writing from the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the manager of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark. Contact the Foundation as set forth in Section 3 below.

1.F.

1.F.1. Project Gutenberg volunteers and employees expend considerable effort to identify, do copyright research on, transcribe and proofread works not protected by U.S. copyright law in creating the Project Gutenberg™ collection. Despite these efforts, Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, and the medium on which they may be stored, may contain “Defects,” such as, but not limited to, incomplete, inaccurate or corrupt data, transcription errors, a copyright or other intellectual property infringement, a defective or damaged disk or other medium, a computer virus, or computer codes that damage or cannot be read by your equipment.

1.F.2. LIMITED WARRANTY, DISCLAIMER OF DAMAGES - Except for the "Right of Replacement or Refund" described in paragraph 1.F.3, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, and any other party distributing a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work under this agreement, disclaim all liability to you for damages, costs and expenses, including legal fees. YOU AGREE THAT YOU HAVE NO REMEDIES FOR NEGLIGENCE, STRICT LIABILITY, BREACH OF WARRANTY OR BREACH OF CONTRACT EXCEPT THOSE PROVIDED IN PARAGRAPH 1.F.3. YOU AGREE THAT THE FOUNDATION, THE TRADEMARK OWNER, AND ANY DISTRIBUTOR UNDER THIS AGREEMENT WILL NOT BE LIABLE TO YOU FOR ACTUAL, DIRECT, INDIRECT, CONSEQUENTIAL, PUNITIVE OR INCIDENTAL DAMAGES EVEN IF YOU GIVE NOTICE OF THE POSSIBILITY OF SUCH DAMAGE.

1.F.3. LIMITED RIGHT OF REPLACEMENT OR REFUND - If you discover a defect in this electronic work within 90 days of receiving it, you can receive a refund of the money (if any) you paid for it by sending a written explanation to the person you received the work from. If you received the work on a physical medium, you must return the medium with your written explanation. The person or entity that provided you with the defective work may elect to provide a replacement copy in lieu of a refund. If you received the work electronically, the person or entity providing it to you may choose to give you a second opportunity to receive the work electronically in lieu of a refund. If the second copy is also defective, you may demand a refund in writing without further opportunities to fix the problem.

1.F.4. Except for the limited right of replacement or refund set forth in paragraph 1.F.3, this work is provided to you 'AS-IS', WITH NO OTHER WARRANTIES OF ANY KIND, EXPRESS OR IMPLIED, INCLUDING BUT NOT LIMITED TO WARRANTIES OF MERCHANTABILITY OR FITNESS FOR ANY PURPOSE.

1.F.5. Some states do not allow disclaimers of certain implied warranties or the exclusion or limitation of certain types of damages. If any disclaimer or limitation set forth in this agreement violates the law of the state applicable to this agreement, the agreement shall be interpreted to make the maximum disclaimer or limitation permitted by the applicable state law. The invalidity or unenforceability of any provision of this agreement shall not void the remaining provisions.

1.F.6. INDEMNITY - You agree to indemnify and hold the Foundation, the trademark owner, any agent or employee of the Foundation, anyone providing copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in accordance with this agreement, and any volunteers associated with the production, promotion and distribution of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, harmless from all liability, costs and expenses, including legal fees, that arise directly or indirectly from any of the following which you do or cause to occur: (a) distribution of this or any Project Gutenberg™ work, (b) alteration, modification, or additions or deletions to any Project Gutenberg™ work, and (c) any Defect you cause.

Section 2. Information about the Mission of Project Gutenberg™

Project Gutenberg™ is synonymous with the free distribution of electronic works in formats readable by the widest variety of computers including obsolete, old, middle-aged and new computers. It exists because of the efforts of hundreds of volunteers and donations from people in all walks of life.

Volunteers and financial support to provide volunteers with the assistance they need are critical to reaching Project Gutenberg™'s goals and ensuring that the Project Gutenberg™ collection will remain freely available for generations to come. In 2001, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation was created to provide a secure and permanent future for Project Gutenberg™ and future generations. To learn more about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and how your efforts and donations can help, see Sections 3 and 4 and the Foundation information page at www.gutenberg.org.

Section 3. Information about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation is a non-profit 501(c)(3) educational corporation organized under the laws of the state of Mississippi and granted tax exempt status by the Internal Revenue Service. The Foundation's EIN or federal tax identification number is 64-6221541. Contributions to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation are tax deductible to the full extent permitted by U.S. federal laws and your state's laws.

The Foundation's business office is located at 809 North 1500 West, Salt Lake City, UT 84116, (801) 596-1887. Email contact links and up to date contact information can be found at the Foundation's website and official page at www.gutenberg.org/contact

Section 4. Information about Donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

Project Gutenberg™ depends upon and cannot survive without widespread public support and donations to carry out its mission of increasing the number of public domain and licensed works

that can be freely distributed in machine-readable form accessible by the widest array of equipment including outdated equipment. Many small donations (\$1 to \$5,000) are particularly important to maintaining tax exempt status with the IRS.

The Foundation is committed to complying with the laws regulating charities and charitable donations in all 50 states of the United States. Compliance requirements are not uniform and it takes a considerable effort, much paperwork and many fees to meet and keep up with these requirements. We do not solicit donations in locations where we have not received written confirmation of compliance. To SEND DONATIONS or determine the status of compliance for any particular state visit www.gutenberg.org/donate.

While we cannot and do not solicit contributions from states where we have not met the solicitation requirements, we know of no prohibition against accepting unsolicited donations from donors in such states who approach us with offers to donate.

International donations are gratefully accepted, but we cannot make any statements concerning tax treatment of donations received from outside the United States. U.S. laws alone swamp our small staff.

Please check the Project Gutenberg web pages for current donation methods and addresses. Donations are accepted in a number of other ways including checks, online payments and credit card donations. To donate, please visit: www.gutenberg.org/donate

Section 5. General Information About Project Gutenberg™ electronic works

Professor Michael S. Hart was the originator of the Project Gutenberg™ concept of a library of electronic works that could be freely shared with anyone. For forty years, he produced and distributed Project Gutenberg™ eBooks with only a loose network of volunteer support.

Project Gutenberg™ eBooks are often created from several printed editions, all of which are confirmed as not protected by copyright in the U.S. unless a copyright notice is included. Thus, we do not necessarily keep eBooks in compliance with any particular paper edition.

Most people start at our website which has the main PG search facility: www.gutenberg.org.

This website includes information about Project Gutenberg™, including how to make donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, how to help produce our new eBooks, and how to subscribe to our email newsletter to hear about new eBooks.